

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY



127 698

UNIVERSAL  
LIBRARY















# EGYPT'S

## PAST, PRESENT AND FUTURE

BY

J. MORTON HOWELL, A.M., M.D., LL.D.

FIRST AMERICAN MINISTER TO EGYPT

†

COPYRIGHT  
1929  
DR. J MORTON HOWELL

First Published 1929

THIS BOOK  
is Dedicated by the Author  
to

JUSTICE AND TRUTH

And is written in the hope that it  
will assist in lifting the burdens  
now being inflicted upon a nation  
of people who are the descendants  
and representatives of the world's  
first civilization.



## PREFACE

In the discussion of the subject of our book, "Egypt," we shall attempt, first, briefly to refer to her past, for the most part fascinating history, and to outline her accomplishments in the arts and sciences, and indeed in all those requisites necessary for a great civilization, as shall better enable us to compare her present status, along all lines, with those of the past; and, too, render us the more able to prognosticate as to what the future state of her people may be.

For is it not true of a nation of people, as it is true of individuals, that the one best way to judge as to what the future may have in store for them is to note their history of deeds, and accomplishments of the past?

We shall, therefore, consider the subject under three heads, or divisions: Egypt's past, present, and probable future.

In this discussion, however, the main object will be to point out the actual status of this people as it relates to their internal and domestic affairs, together, and more particularly perhaps, to their situation in relation to the other Nations or Powers.

In the preparation of this book I have not alone endeavored to profit by close-hand personal observation, during a term of diplomatic life of nearly six years in Egypt, in which time there occurred a reversal of status, from that of a dependency—or vassal province—to a



ent state, with certain restrictions or provisions, imposed upon her by the British, who have "occupied" the country since 1882; but I have consulted, as well, nearly every writer on Egypt, from that of a Herodotus down to those of the present time.

I am especially indebted to Professor George Steindorf, of Leipzig University, for information found in his book on Ancient Egypt, particularly as it pertains to the chronology of Egypt's ancient rulers. Indeed, I have quoted liberally from his writings from Menes, founder of first dynasty, 3400 B. C., down to the close of the eighteenth century or to the coming of Napoleon in 1798.

I am likewise greatly indebted to the personal, unbiased observations of Wilfred Scarven Blunt, in his "Secret History of the English Occupation of Egypt," as well as to those of Francis Adams, as recorded in his book, "The New Egypt." Proper recognition of the observations of other writers will be made from time to time.

## CONTENTS

Chapter	Page
I    Introductory Remarks .....	1
II   First Official Call on Egypt's Ruler .....	7
III  Letters From the President .....	21
IV   Moses—An Outstanding Character in Egyptian History .....	31
V    The Founder of Present Dynasty—Outstanding Facts in Official History .....	37
VI   Mount Sinai .....	51
VII  Chronology .....	57
VIII Egypt, a Vassal of Macedonia—Passing of Cleopatra and Mark Antony—Birth of Jesus .....	89
IX   Napoleon in Egypt .....	95
X    Mohammed Ali, Founder of Present Dynasty— Destruction of Mamelukes—Religious Toleration in Egypt .....	101
XI   Prince Omar Toussoun .....	121
XII  Ismail Pasha .....	133
XIII Tewfik Pasha—Abbas Hilmi II. ....	141
XIV  Fuad I. ....	153
XV   Colonel Lawrence in Arabia—Unfulfilled Promises of the British—Cromer's Work in Egypt Compared With That of General Wood in Cuba .....	175
XVI  An Incident Showing Splendid Spirit of Lord Allenby in Contrast to that of His Successor—The First Min- istry After the Declaration of Independence .....	191
XVII Difficulties Encountered in Drafting the Constitution —Second Banishment of Zaghloul Pasha—Ministry of Ibrahim Pasha and its Accomplishments .....	201
XVIII The Ultimatum .....	219

XX	British Conception of Her Duty in the Sudan—The Source of Opium in China—Opium Conference in Geneva and its Results .....	237
XXI	The Capitulations—Extra-Territorial Rights .....	265
XXII	The Mixed Courts of Egypt .....	281
XXIII	Visitors .....	297
XXIV	The Climate of Egypt .....	301
XXV	Education .....	311
XXVI	Future of Egypt .....	323
	The Appendices .....	329
	Index .....	377

## INDEX OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	Page
Dr. J. Morton Howell .....	Frontispiece
Lord Allenby .....	7
King Fuad's Grand Chamberlain with American Minister at the Palace in Alexandria.....	13
Carriage With Mounted Guard When Calling For Minister....	13
Aswan Dam .....	29
His Excellency Samy Pasha .....	29
Front View of Tomb of Tut-Ankh-Amen .....	65
The American Minister and Mr. Howard Carter.....	65
His Highness, Prince Omar Tousoun .....	125
Two Photographs of the Late Ismail Pasha .....	135
Prince Mohammed Ali .....	141
His Majesty, King Fuad I.....	157
Crown Prince Farouk .....	157
Ahmed Hassanein Bey .....	163
Abdin Palace, Cairo .....	165
Ras El Tin Palace, Alexandria .....	165
Wacyf Boutros Gahli Pasha .....	207
His Excellency Mustapha El Nahas Pasha .....	215
His Excellency Zaghloul Pasha .....	231
Preparatory Department, Assiut College .....	317
American University, Cairo .....	318
Dr. Charles R. Watson .....	318



## CHAPTER I

### INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

IN 1911, when forty-eight years of age, I made my first pilgrimage to the Near East, and spent some time in Egypt, during the spring months of the year. I had, at previous times, read much as to her people, marvelous productivity of the soil, unsurpassed winter climate, and of the many objective evidences of a high degree of civilization which obtained thousands of years before the countries of Europe were known to exist. While my reading had greatly impressed me, as one should be impressed with a country which had cradled civilization, my beholding the country and studying all conditions there to be found, at close range, greatly augmented my interest.

I found myself, after my return to my home, in Dayton, Ohio, and to my work, that of a busy physician and surgeon, reading with avidity everything written upon the subject of Egypt and her people; certainly, not at that time, thinking seriously that I might at some time be selected by my government to represent it in Egypt.

I think, however, I must have had a natural inclination for this kind of work; for during my travels abroad I had found myself calling upon our Ambassadors and Ministers, and without an exception, found them not only urbane and interesting, but willing, as well, to extend to me every courtesy and kindness possible. I found myself, somehow, comparing my knowledge of foreign questions, with which they had to deal, in so far as I was then able to do, with

at the Geneva Conference acted as if the conference were a game in which they could play their cards of superficial diplomacy and navalistic bluff in the effort to take armament tricks. The conference needed men like Hughes, Dawes, Owen Young, Balfour, or Baldwin on the ground to deal direct with each other, and not with the indirection of part-potentiaries.

"The trouble with career men and naval experts is that they do not know the great feeling for peace and disarmament that is in the hearts of the people. They see only the men opposite them at the conference table, and not the millions of men and women, their own compatriots, who are behind them. They play the game, perhaps unwittingly, of the lobbyists who are maintained in the capitals of the great nations by the manufacturers of armament. Thus we have 'big navy' men, just as France and Germany and Italy have 'big army' men.

"That the United States and Great Britain have failed at Geneva to reach an agreement is a disgrace to the representatives of both nations. Hughes and Balfour did not fail in the Washington conference, and Charles Dawes and Owen Young and the men of other nations did not fail in the Reparations conference. The only diplomats who came off well at Geneva were the Japanese. They did their part, and thereby increased the confidence of the world in Japan's peaceful intentions."

There are exceptions, of course, among these men; some are most worthy and efficient. I know a few such. They should be given every proper encouragement and consideration. I know of other men of this class who have been in the public service for years, who are absolutely unfit, morally or intellectually, to represent us either in the state department or abroad, and are kept there only

because they are "career men," and are backed by a bureaucratic control.

I well understand that this digression does not well comport with my subject, but since it, as I have indicated, is of more than national importance, I wish to call attention to it.

Our presidents, secretaries of state and their cabinet officials, have not been selected from the career class, but from men in the political, professional, and business world, who have been tried and not found wanting in these essentials necessary to pilot the ship of state through rough diplomatic seas. I should like to discuss further this very important question, which affects not alone our country but other powers as well, but realize that this is neither the time nor place to do so.

Returning to my subject, Egypt, and my official relations with that country, I may observe that when it was proposed that a foreign post would be available for me under Mr. Harding, and when I was advised that every member of the House of Representatives from Ohio, numbering twenty-two, had met in caucus and with Senator Willis had unanimously indorsed me to the President as Diplomatic Agent and Consul-General to Egypt, I consented to accept the post and was appointed October 7, 1921, and was promptly confirmed by the Senate. Following Egypt's becoming a sovereign and independent state, February 28, 1922, I was appointed by Mr. Harding, June 21, 1922, as America's first Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary to Egypt, and my appointment was again promptly confirmed by the Senate.

I was advised in my letter of instructions handed me by the State Department on leaving Washington, after my first appointment to which reference is made above, that



my exequatur had been forwarded to the American Embassy in London, and would be transmitted by it to His British Majesty's High Commissioner in Egypt, who would, in turn, present it to His Royal Highness Sultan Fuad I. for his signature of acceptance.

On my arrival in Cairo it became incumbent upon me, under the political regime then obtaining, to make my first official call upon the High Commissioner, Lord Allenby, and later upon His Royal Highness, the Sultan. I was fully prepared to believe that in Lord Allenby I would find a man of fine presence, of dignified, soldierly bearing, high culture, and noble, manly intentions. I felt, after my first interview with him, that he fully measured up to the high standard I had anticipated. After nearly four years of official and social contact with him, I am happy to say that my very high opinion first formed of him has been augmented, and I greatly regretted to see him and Lady Allenby leave Egypt, as they did do, officially, June 14, 1925. I shall have occasion later on to discuss more fully his Lordship's official connection with Egyptian affairs.



LORD ALLENBY



## CHAPTER II

### FIRST OFFICIAL CALL ON EGYPT'S RULER

ON January 1, 1922, I had my first official audience with Sultan Fuad I. I found His Royal Highness a man in the prime of physical manhood—fifty-three years of age—whose accession to the throne occurred on October 9, 1917, at the age of forty-nine, succeeding his late brother, Hussein. It may be stated that Fuad I. was not in direct line for this high distinction, but was chosen because the rightful legal heir to the throne, Crown Prince Kamil El Dine Hussein, declined the honor or title. His Highness, however, was well calculated to succeed his late royal father, Hussein, but it is believed that he declined so to do for domestic reasons. For it will be remembered he married a sister of the Khedive Abbas, who lost his throne in 1914 at the commencement of the World War, when, it was alleged by the English, he was aiding in every possible way the Central Powers—Germany, Austria, Turkey, etc.—against England and her allies.

The Sultan had been made fully acquainted with my professional history and was, therefore, particularly interested in my work in prophylactic medicine, hygiene and sanitation, and directed the course of our conversation along that channel. He appreciated the fact that his people were suffering from neglect along these lines to a superlative degree (and are yet), and he was eager to hear from me first hand of our fight to rid the United States and her possessions of infectious and contagious

diseases. The audience lasted for over one hour, and I was much impressed with not alone the general intelligence of His Highness, but with his most obvious interest in the general welfare of the people. My good opinion of this splendid ruler has been augmented as I have been able to see the machinery set in motion by him, handicapped as he has been, and is now, in his efforts to solve the great problems of education, hygiene, agriculture, etc., all so essential for the welfare of his people.

Objective evidence of this understanding is shown by the primary, secondary, high, and industrial schools now in every one of the fourteen provinces. The curriculum provides, among other important branches, the study of hygiene. His Majesty, too, has realized the one great dream of his life—the founding of an Egyptian university which, judging from present indications, is destined, in due time, to be the equal of any such found in England or America. Aside from Egypt's best teachers here employed, some of the best known professors of Europe have been engaged to fill chairs in this institution.

The advantages here, from a medical and surgical standpoint, are marvelous. For Cairo, now a city of 1,000,000 people, with a plethoric suburban population and many hospitals, affords clinical advantages equaled by few cities of the world. And, unlike many cities of Europe and America, she has but one school of medicine—"Regular"—and the clinical material from these various hospitals is utilized by the medical department of the university.

Not alone along educational lines has this splendid ruler scored heavily in the right direction, but he has set in motion plans for the reclamation of 650,000 acres of arid land by the installation of proper dams to supply the

same with water. He has not only extended the system of railroads throughout Egypt for a distance of 1,600 miles, but also has greatly improved the rolling stock. It is now possible for travelers, upon leaving the passenger steamers at Port Said and Alexandria, to board a train equipped with the finest sleeping, dining and observation cars on their way to Cairo, Assiut, Luxor and Aswan. The road from Luxor to Aswan is now standard gauge. So it may be seen that this wide-awake, well-disposed ruler is pursuing a course of construction along all well-known fundamental lines which will make of his country and his people something of which all men may be justly proud.

The history of this people from the advent of the British into Egypt in 1882, with respect to independence, but particularly the agitation for same, since the close of the World War in 1918, led me to believe, when I accepted the post of Diplomatic Agent and Consul-General, that a change in status was imminent. I had not long to wait.

It will be recalled, up to the time of the overthrow of Khedive Abbas in 1914, that Egypt was a dependency of the Ottoman empire. She, indeed, was under almost the absolute control of what might be regarded as two foreign Powers, the suzerainty of the Sublime Porte—Turkey—and the "occupancy" of the British Empire. After the overthrow of the Egyptian ruler—the Khedive—in 1914, she was declared by England to be independent of the Sublime Porte, and that, therefore, all financial obligations and other treaties between the Porte and Egypt were at an end.

The British, at this juncture, made another independent move without consulting Egypt or any other Power, by declaring herself a "Protector" of Egypt instead of an

"occupant," which meant martial law, with an increased number of armed soldiers and her word the law of the land.

Upon the overthrow of the comparatively young Khedive, Abbas Hilmi, the son of Tewfik Pasha, whom the British alleged they came to Egypt solely to protect in his legal rights (with regard to which military interference and allegements we shall deal later on at some length), Hussein Kamil, an uncle of the dethroned Khedive, was offered and accepted the throne, and his title became Sultan instead of Khedive, for the reason above stated (political divorcement from Turkey). This ruler, a plain, well-disposed man, fairly well advanced in years, did not long survive to enjoy his exalted position, for he died in 1917, when, as indicated above, his brother, Prince Fuad, was selected for this exalted position. After the signing of the Armistice and the closing of the World War, political matters in Egypt, as elsewhere on this side of the Atlantic, were in a chaotic state. Those Egyptians (and they were by no means few) who felt that the time had fully come when martial law should be brought to a close and the Protectorate of England ended, and Egypt be declared an independent sovereign state, became most active in asserting what they regarded as their legal rights. There were several particularly strong leaders in favor of this movement, and they were well supported by the native newspapers, whose editors displayed, it must be admitted, no mean ability in the furtherance of this propaganda.

Upon the announcement on the part of the British government that they recognized Egypt as an independent sovereign state, with certain questions to be later agreed upon (as to these questions, which are four in

number, more will be said anon), the Sultan's status was, on March 15, 1922, changed to that of King, with the usual formalities attendant upon the new regime. Then rapidly, in succession, the various Powers began to fall into line, recognizing this changed status and raising their Consulates-General to Legations, and the status of their representatives from Diplomatic Agents and Consuls-General to that of Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary.

England was, of course, the first power to recognize this changed condition, for it was she who had held Egypt throttled by her military "occupancy," or dictation, for forty years, and this change was only brought about by the never-dying agitation for independence by such patriots as Zaghloul Pasha and his many followers, who finally convinced the great soldier, the then High Commissioner of Egypt, Lord Allenby, and his legal adviser, Sir Maurice Amos, of the justice of their demand. It was by their combined efforts and insistence before the British government that the latter finally, but reluctantly, declared Egypt to be a sovereign and independent state, subject, however, as above noted, to four outstanding questions to be agreed upon later between the two countries.

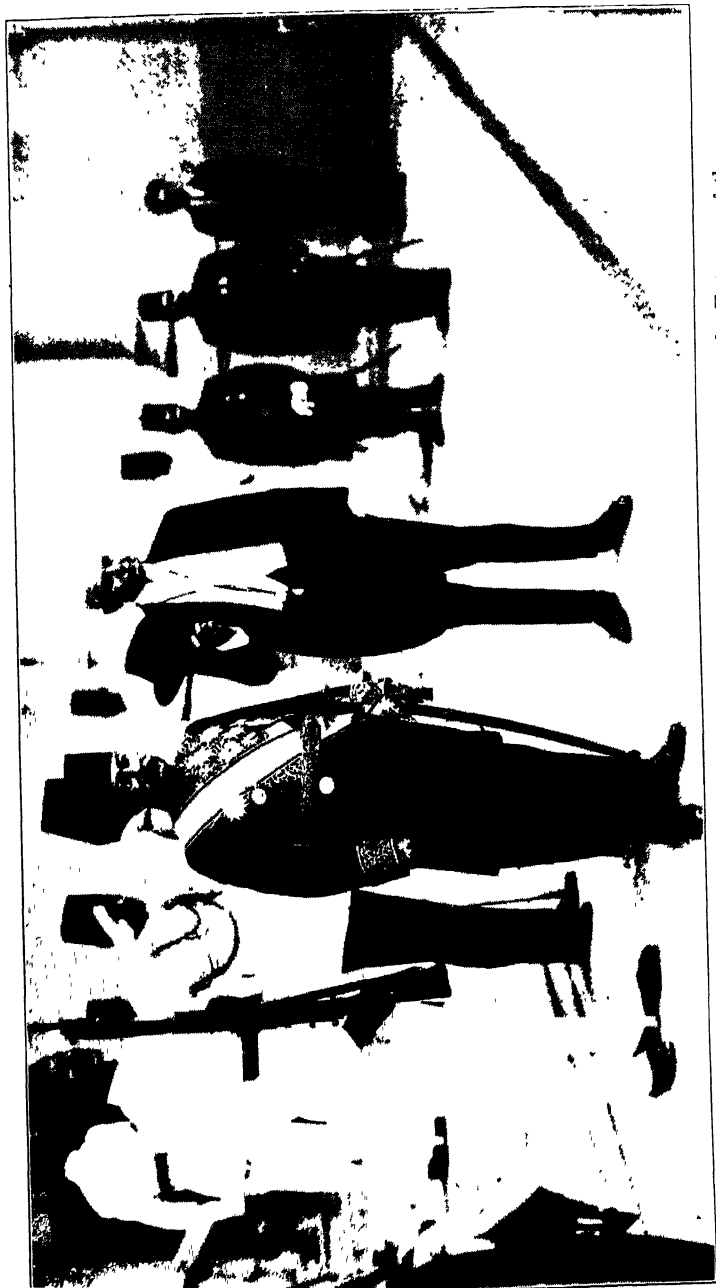
Parenthetically, however, it should be noted that, while Great Britain so recognized Egypt in her declaration, she did not in any way change the title of her chief representative, for he is still High Commissioner. Large bodies of soldiers parade before the Residency (the official home of the High Commissioner) headed by bands of music, flying the British flag. An air of independence and authority characterizes both the British officers and their soldiers wherever seen. The present High Commissioner, George Lloyd, demands and receives all the courtesies and



dignities enjoyed by his predecessor before the declaration of independence, such as being furnished, at his command, special trains at the expense of the Egyptian government, and when leaving Cairo or Alexandria, or returning to same, to pass through the King's private entrance and exit.

The imperial, autocratic behavior of this official, who conducts himself toward Egypt as did Lord Howe before the American colonists during the Revolutionary War, is a constant thorn in the sides of the Egyptian people. Of these questions we shall speak further later on. Great Britain's declaration of recognition of the independence of Egypt was followed by Russia's "official" notice, issued by Mr. Smyrnoff, a Diplomatic Agent and Consul-General appointed by the Czar of Russia, and not at this time nor at any other time thereafter recognized by the Russian government. This action seemed to many of us as rather grotesque; but it should be added that there were at that time not a few Russians in Egypt who were "sheep without a shepherd," and the Egyptian government, recognizing this unsatisfactory situation, permitted him to have official, paternal jurisdiction over these people, and gave to him, until his death four years ago, a supporting salary. Persia swung into line next, and then followed, in rather rapid succession, France, Italy, Belgium, Greece, Holland, Denmark, and the other Powers.

My own government was the last among the Powers to recognize this change, which made Egypt, for the first time since the reign of Cleopatra, two thousand years ago, a kingdom. This recognition upon the part of the United States of America came at last to me, however, and the instructions from the Department of State were as follows:



King's Grand Chamberlain with the American Minister and Guard of Honor at the Entrance of the Palace at Alexandria.



This photograph shows carriage standing in front of the American Legation when calling for the  
Minister, with the mounted Guard of Honor in front

“Communicate a note to the Egyptian Minister for Foreign Affairs textually as follows: ‘I take pleasure in informing Your Excellency that the President has decided to recognize the Independence of Egypt, this recognition being subject to the rights of the United States of America as they have hitherto existed.’ ”

I was at the same time notified of the change of my status and apprised of the fact that President Harding had appointed me Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary to this post, which, as above noted, made me the first American Minister to Egypt. While my appointment was immediately and unanimously confirmed by the Senate, my Letter of Credence was delayed somewhat, and when it arrived the King, with his Cabinet, as also the diplomatic corps, including myself, were domiciled at the “summer capital,” Alexandria, and it was not until August following that the proper arrangements were made for me to lay before His Majesty my Letter of Credence clothing me with power to act in the capacity above noted.

For the benefit of my readers who are not familiar with the ceremony of being thus officially received, I will state that on the appointed day and hour the court carriage, to which is attached from four to six of the most beautiful horses, with outriders, is sent for you, bearing the King's Grand-Chamberlain in full uniform. At the palace you are greeted by a guard of honor, standing at attention, and the Government band playing appropriate national airs, including on the occasion under reference, the American national anthem. You are conducted past the guard lining the entrance to the Palace where you are received by His Majesty, surrounded by his Ministers and other officials of His Majesty's Court. The King, in matchless court uniform, receives you, standing, when you deliver

an appropriate, comparatively short address, to which His Majesty, in like manner, replies. I may add, in this connection, that custom provides that a copy of your remarks to be made upon this occasion be sent to the Minister of Foreign Affairs, who in turn submits it to the King, that he may thus be enabled appropriately to reply. This important formality concluded, you are returned to your official residence in the same manner noted above, when occurs exchange of calls between yourself and the Minister of Foreign Affairs.

The accession of King Fuad I. to the throne was the first ceremony of the kind to be celebrated in Egypt since Cleopatra was enabled, by the will of her august father and the able assistance of Julius Caesar, to ascend the throne, forty-six years B. C. This constituted a unique and memorable occasion, and therefore, as I believed, called for remarks of a somewhat different character from those usually indulged in upon such occasions. As of possible interest, therefore, to the reader, I append below my address, with His Majesty's reply to same, together with one of the editorials bearing upon my remarks in question:

"May it please Your Majesty:

"This occasion occurs to me as a most epochal one in the annals of history, as I have the honour to address Your Majesty as the first Independent Sovereign Ruler of Egypt for over two thousand years. Not alone this, I have the honour to address Your Majesty also as the first Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States of America to Egypt.

"The presentation of Letters of Credence from a Foreign Representative to a Sovereign Ruler usually marks the first acquaintance of the Sovereign and the Foreign

Representative, at least in an official capacity. I feel that this does not obtain upon this occasion, for well do I recall my first official audience with Your Majesty in January of this year, when Your Majesty at considerable detail, particularly along the lines of education and insanitation, expressed the hope that Your Majesty would be able to institute such measures as should bring about imperative changes along these and other avenues, for the benefit of Your Majesty's people. I am pleased, even at this early date, to be able to observe that Your Majesty's ideas and conceptions, then expressed, as to these needed reforms, have begun to take formative action.

"Every audience with Your Majesty, from the first, of which mention has specifically been made, has augmented my confidence in Your Majesty's clearness of mental vision, honesty of purpose, and courage of conviction to carry on these and other measures of reform which should bring to Your Majesty's people contentment and happiness and make of, and for them, an enduring and everywhere a respected nation.

"Again, Your Majesty is to be congratulated upon the fact that there have been born new ideas and conceptions of diplomacy within the last decade. The most favoured and powerful nations of the world today recognize that 'diplomacy' no longer means 'duplicity' and 'subterfuge', but that 'yes' means 'yes', and that 'no' means 'no'. The diplomatic language used, to be of the plainest, clearest, and most easily understood; and that that which is true of the law governing the rights and practices of one individual towards another, or a collection of individuals towards another collection of individuals, must, in a very large measure, be likewise true of nations in their intercourse one with another. If these methods are followed,

as I am sure that Your Majesty intends that they shall be followed, continuous prosperity and contentment will bless your reign, and Your Majesty will be a lasting benediction to the people of Your Majesty's kingdom.

"Apropos of these changed ideas or conceptions in the matter of diplomacy, and the governing powers or rules of same, in the control of issues and events of the future, the words of the Chief Executive of the United States, in a recent address, seem timely when he said: 'Whoever tries to peer through the veil, and descry the issues and events of the coming time, must be moved to very earnest supplication, that sincerity, simplicity, straightforwardness, moral courage and high honour shall be the square and compass, the plummet and lever by which to shape the conduct and the aims of men.'

"As America's first Minister to Egypt, it affords me very great pleasure, on behalf of the President of the United States of America, as well as on my own account, to wish Your Majesty a long reign in which—by Your Majesty's love of justice, manifested in the spirit of helpfulness towards your people—Your Majesty will be known and read by all men as a just, beneficent and kingly ruler."

COPY AND TRANSLATION, FROM THE FRENCH, OF THE  
KING'S REPLY

"Mr. Minister:

"I am happy to receive today the letters by which the President of the Republic accredits you before me, in the quality of Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States of America.

"Nothing could be more agreeable to me, at the moment when Egypt has become a sovereign and independent country, than to see conferred the interests of your na-

tion on him, whose experience and perfect courtesy I have already, on many occasions, appreciated.

"I am very sensible of the wishes you have addressed to me in the name of the President of the United States, and I beg you, Mr. Minister, to transmit to him my lively thanks, and to be to him the interpreter of the hopes I am forming from the bottom of my heart for the happiness and prosperity of the Great and Noble American Nation.

"I wish, at the same time, to express how much I appreciate the sentiments you have animated regarding Egypt, and which you express in such feeling terms, and it pleases me to assure you that in the accomplishment of your mission you can always count on my entire support and on the amicable cooperation of my Government in the development and more intimate rendering of the good relations which so happily exist between Egypt and the United States of America."

EDITORIAL FROM THE "L'EGYPTE NOUVELLE", CAIRO,  
EGYPT, SEPTEMBER, 1922  
(Translation from the French)

### "THE STYLE OF AMBASSADORS"

"Everyone has read the edifying homily which Dr. J. Morton Howell, Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States of America to Egypt, proffered the other day when transmitting his letters of credence to His Majesty the King.

"Among the divers amiable and vigorous remarks which he delivered in a single flow, Dr. Morton Howell said:

" 'Again, Your Majesty is to be congratulated upon the fact that there have been born new ideas and conceptions of diplomacy within the last decade. The most favored and powerful nations of the world today recognize that



"diplomacy" no longer means "duplicity" and "subterfuge", but that "yes" means "yes", and that "no" means "no". The diplomatic language used, to be of the plainest, clearest and most easily understood, and that that which is true of the law governing the rights and practices of one individual towards another, or a collection of individuals towards another collection of individuals must, in a very large measure, be likewise true of nations in their intercourse one with another. If these methods are followed, as I am sure that Your Majesty intends they shall be followed, continuous prosperity and contentment will bless your reign, and Your Majesty will be a lasting benediction to the people of Your Majesty's kingdom.'

"Here are some of the excellent and strong words which we have been able to roughly gather from one of the flattering discourses that one not bestitched with lace and gold braid uttered on this occasion. Here, I say, is a salubrious language, which allows the outside air, charged with salt and sea aroma, to penetrate the mephitic chambers where the destinies of a people are struggling for life. I love Dr. J. Morton Howell without knowing him. I love him for his frankness, for the calm audacity with which, overturning all the rules of an imbecile protocol, he made to the world here, without fearing what would be said, the words of truth which resuscitated the hope of a better future.

"I regret only one thing: that he had the air of revoking the loyalty of the people whom he was addressing.

"This phrase: ' "if" these principles are followed'—this 'if', which leaves confidence in suspense, and which seems to wait before judging the coming events (whether he was right or wrong in so thinking) was it not a poisoned arrow, pointed at the Egyptian Minister of Foreign Affairs?

"Americans are terrible when they make up their minds to do a thing. Nothing can resist them, and they have a way of their own of cleaning the shelves of their cabinets.

"In his reply, His Majesty did not take count of this somewhat embarrassing reticence. With a noble serenity His Majesty limited himself to accept the wishes of the American government, and to thank her Envoy Extraordinary for his not less extraordinary speech. His Majesty's reply was limpid, courteous, dignified and measured. There was then—for the amateurs of rare sensations—a pretty page of history, still palpitating with life, to cut out forthwith and paste on the leaves of memory for the archives of the future."



## CHAPTER III

### LETTERS FROM THE PRESIDENT—

GEOGRAPHY—AGRICULTURAL PROBLEMS—IRRIGATION—  
EFFECTS OF DAMS ON LAND PRODUCTION IN EGYPT

II APPEND the following letters from President Warren G. Harding:

September 27, 1922.

"The White House,

"Washington, D. C.

"My dear Dr. Howell:

"I had your letter of September 2nd, with its very interesting enclosures. It is very gratifying that your recognition as Minister was attended by so many agreeably significant expressions, and that there was such favorable press comment. I need not tell you that this is all highly pleasing to your home government. It would seem foolish to undertake to tell you about conditions here, because the press will give you a reflex of the actualities so long before a letter may be delivered. We are fairly well out of the industrial conditions which were threatening to delay the return to commercial good fortune and a source of no little anxiety to all the people. We are not wholly readjusted, however, to normal conditions. This is not to be accomplished in one or two years after such a tumult as the World War wrought, but there is a suitable sentiment in America, and eventually we are to come out all right. Meanwhile it is pleasing to know of the good im-

pressions concerning us abroad, and we are grateful for those who can speak of America so satisfactorily, as many of our Ministers (yourself included) are doing.

"With very best regards, I am,

"Very truly yours,

"WARREN G. HARDING."

I may observe in this connection that not a few letters passed between the President and myself during his short term as President, but I shall only quote from one other, the last message received from him on the eve of his fateful trip to Alaska:

"June 18, 1923.

"My dear Minister Howell:

"I was glad to have your letter of May 26th, with its enclosures. I have not had opportunity to give a careful reading to the address because I am overwhelmed with work incident to preparation for the Alaskan trip, now only three days away. I have wanted you to have this acknowledgment and will give myself the satisfaction of reading the address at a more leisurely moment.

"I am very pleased to tell you, and I am sure it will be a satisfaction for you to know it, that only the most cordial words of commendation concerning you and your service come to me. It is always most gratifying to know one has made such a satisfactory appointment.

"Very truly yours,

"WARREN G. HARDING."

Having now been duly accredited as America's first Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary to this, the newest and yet, paradoxical as it may seem, the oldest kingdom of the world, I was anxious to acquaint myself, at first hand, with the present happenings of this most ancient and interesting country.

While keeping close tab on the agitated political situation here obtaining, I found time to review, somewhat, its ancient history and to visit the various tombs of its erstwhile rulers, and there to observe the notable objective evidences of the high degree of civilization and the wonderful accomplishments in the arts and sciences of these people thousands of years ago.

Egypt is located in Northeastern Africa and is bounded on the north by the Mediterranean Sea, on the east by the Arabian Desert and the Red Sea, on the west by the Libyan Desert, and on the south by Nubia and the Sudan. That part of the country watered and fertilized by the Nile has been likened in shape to that of a large chrysanthemum, with the stem attached. The former, the "flower" representing the delta, extending from Cairo north to the Mediterranean Sea—a distance of about one hundred miles—while its width extends from east to west for a distance of more than a hundred and forty miles, from the Suez Canal on the east to Alexandria on the northwest. The "stem" extends from Aswan on the south, the site of the first cataract and the Aswan dam, to Cairo on the north, a distance of about five hundred miles, being traversed throughout, for the most part through its center, by the Nile, the longest river, save one, in the world. The width of the "stem", including the river, varies at different points from three to eighteen miles. Indeed, for some little distance north of Aswan the tillable land on either side of the Nile would not, I think, be found more than a mile in width.

While the area of Egypt is given as four hundred thousand square miles, its extreme length being six hundred forty miles, and its breadth five hundred ninety-six miles, its tillable area at this time is estimated to be but twelve

thousand square miles; a length from Aswan to the Mediterranean Sea of six hundred miles, with an average width of twenty miles. These figures disclose seven million six hundred eighty thousand acres of cultivatable land. Upon this comparatively narrow strip of territory dwell more than fourteen million people producing products of the soil—cotton, sugar, rice, corn, onions, potatoes, wheat and other cereals and vegetables, enough and plenty to supply their needs and to spare.

The greater area of Egypt, as referred to above as four hundred thousand square miles, includes the valley up to a point twenty-seven miles to the north of Wadi Halfa, the desert strip along the Red Sea, the coast west of Alexandria as far as the Gulf of Solum, the Libyan Desert (which latter possesses five oases), and the greater part of the Sinai Peninsula.

Cotton is the chief article of export. The cotton here grown is of fine quality, especially, the long fibered variety, and is in great demand, even in the United States, by reason of its very superior quality. Perhaps the second greatest export crop grown here is onions. Surprising as it may seem, many thousands of bushels are exported to the United States every year.

England has seen to it that the cotton raised here goes in a large measure to her factories. She has, too, seen to it that no plants for the manufacture of cotton fabrics are established in Egypt unless those of a very minor kind. Just recently a movement has been launched by the president of the Misr Bank in Cairo, Talaat Harb Bey, and some of his wealthy Egyptian friends, to establish in Egypt a factory of rather large dimensions for the manufacture of cotton fabrics much worn by the fellaheen and the servant class. It will be interesting to watch the Brit-

ish action with regard to this project. Lancashire has been taking the Egyptian raw cotton, converting it into fabrics used by these natives, and sending it back to them at enormous profit to the manufacturer. Sugar cane, in paying quantities, is raised here, and the sugar manufacturers do a thriving business. The sugar interests are largely controlled by Europeans, and the work performed both on the plantations and in the factories is done by natives at a daily wage which averages about seven piasters (35 cents). The profit to the manufacturer, as may be seen, with such cheaply paid labor, is enormous. Very little sugar is exported, as the supply is almost wholly consumed in Egypt and the Sudan. Child labor has been used in these factories as well as in every other workable place for forty years, and no effort has been made to correct this exploitation of the youth of the country until the Egyptian Parliament in 1923, following the independence given (?) the country by England, enacted a law requiring compulsory education.

While referring to land productions I wish, briefly, to discuss a very important factor in their development; indeed, an imperative one, that of irrigation, as I believe this system to be not well understood. Most people with whom you talk, when this subject arises, at once refer to the importance of the overflow of the Nile, that good crops may obtain. This overflow, before the installation of the dams and barrages, was most important and essential to crop production. Now, as a matter of fact, very little, comparatively, of the tillable seven million six hundred eighty thousand acres of land is so supplied with water. However, some of it, as indicated, is so watered. The old system of irrigation, before the days of the dams, was known as the basin plan. This consisted of filling



the basin direct from the Nile with the muddy water at the time of the flood, in the late summer and early fall, and allowing the water to run from one basin to the other and then, when complete saturation of the soil by the water had been obtained and the rich, fertilizing silt from the Abyssinian mountains had deposited itself upon the surface of the land, allowing the water to drain back into the Nile. Without a question this process has been the means, by holding the precious cargo—the silt—in suspension during the rapid change in velocity during the flood period, of rendering these fields as productive today as they were five thousand years ago. This ancient system is used south of Assiut, where is located the first barrage, and also along a narrow strip along the western plain on the west bank of the Nile, north of Assiut to the Delta barrage, about fourteen miles north of Cairo. All of the other land of the valley is watered by the Perennial system, whereby the supply of water is absolutely under the control of the hand of man, through the manipulation of the machinery at the Aswan dam and the two barrages.

A most interesting interview was recently given out in the United States by His Excellency Samy Pasha, the Egyptian Minister to the United States, on the subject of "Irrigation", and since His Excellency is an engineer by profession, and as such speaks with authority on this subject, I have, with his consent, appended below the interview in question as it appeared in the San Francisco Chronicle:

**"EGYPTIANS' GREAT NILE DAM — EIGHTH WONDER OF THE WORLD—DOES MORE HARM THAN GOOD."**

**"The Great Aswan Dam of the White Nile, a Mile and a Quarter Long, Built at Tremendous Expense to Irri-**

gate Egypt, But Which, It Seems, Is Doing More Harm Than Good. Four and a Half Years Were Required for the Construction of This Dam Which Cost Nearly \$10,000,000.

"Modern science and human ingenuity have often improved on nature—but not always. And when the great engineers of Britain decided to build the famous Aswan dam across the White Nile and thus double the number of acres which the Nile always irrigated every year, they made a mess of it.

"From early prehistoric times one of the most interesting of all natural phenomena has been nature's gigantic irrigation and fertilizing scheme which has made the vast desert of Egypt rich and fertile and habitable for mankind. The annual floods, sweeping down from the upper Nile every year with tremendous velocity, carried along the rich top soil from the mountain sides of Abyssinia and, spreading out and slowing up, gently deposited the water and the fertilizer over the desert for thousands of miles on each side of the great river.

"Much of the wealth of water and soil rushed down on the Nile into the Mediterranean and was lost. The huge dam was stretched across the Nile to hold these waters and back them up across a wider strip of surrounding desert. It was supposed to be a valuable improvement on the operations of nature. But Mahmoud Samy Pasha, Envoy of His Majesty Fuad I., King of Egypt, to the United States, asserts that no such thing has happened, and while the acreage now irrigated is twice as great as it was before, the crops are no greater than they were, and cost more to produce.

" 'There is no doubt about this,' says Mr. Samy. 'The unfortunate effect of the new system of irrigation which

the Aswan dam has created is proved by figures, the accuracy of which is not open to dispute.

“Consider the all-important cotton crop. The dam reservoir, by supplying more water than was formerly available, has made it practical to plant an enormously increased area in cotton. That might seem altogether satisfactory, but, unfortunately, the production per acre has diminished.

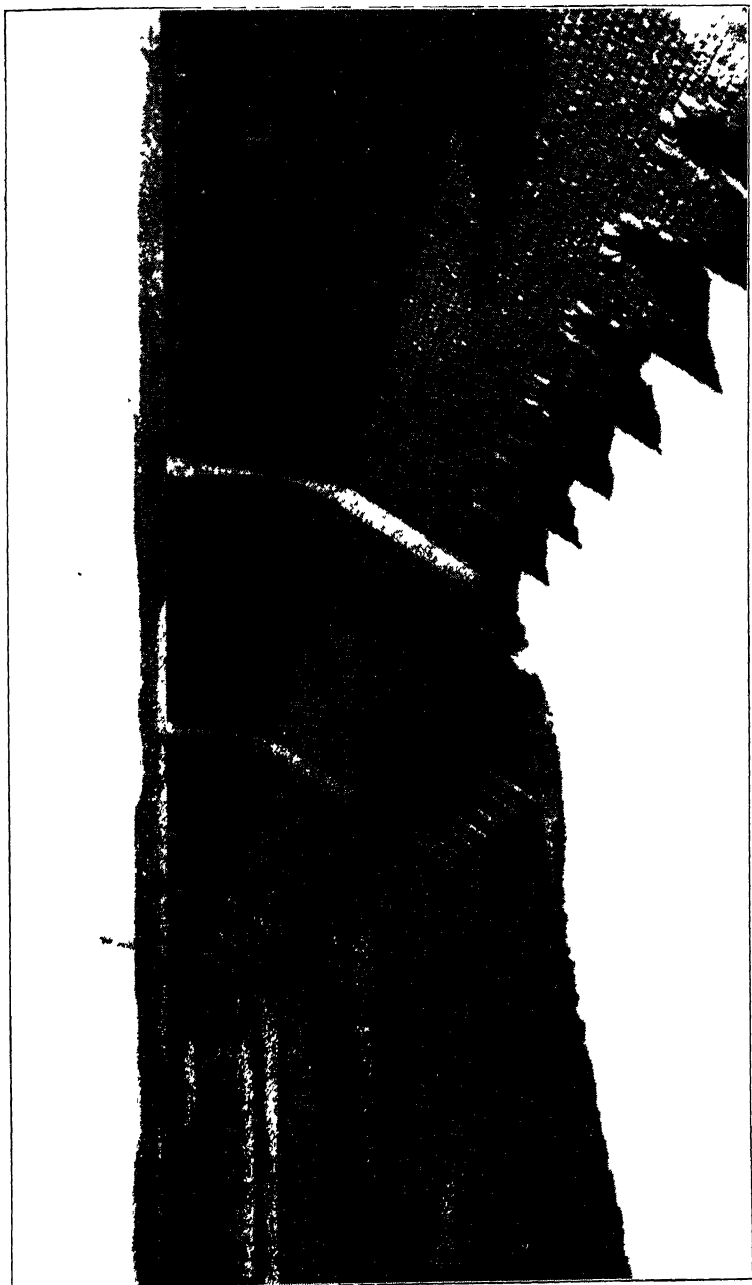
“The yield of cotton per acre began to decline immediately after the dam was put into operation, in 1903. It continued to decline thereafter. In 1901 it was 550 pounds per acre; in 1913 it was only 445 pounds.

“In 1913 the level of the water behind the dam was raised seven meters, much more water being thereby made available to supplement the natural supply. But what happened then? To this increase the cotton responded with a further decrease of production. It fell to 367 pounds the next year, and in 1916 it was only 306 pounds.

“Notwithstanding the great extension of the cotton producing area, the total yield of that crop is about the same as it was before the dam was built.

“There are several reasons for this state of affairs. One of them appears to be that a raising of the level of the subsoil water has had the effect of weakening the plant roots by excessive saturation, with consequent weakening of the plants. Another reason is that the increased humidity favors the breeding of enemy insects.

“A third reason is that the soil is over-worked. The new system of irrigation enables the Egyptian farmer to grow two crops a year, which might seem desirable were it not that the soil, thus dealt with, tends to wear out, its productivity diminishing. That does not promise well for the future fertility of the land.



ASWAN DAM, EGYPT



HIS EXCELLENCY SAMY PASHA  
Egyptian Minister to the United States

“ ‘To a great extent, what I have said about cotton applies to other crops also. Formerly the only fertilizer needed for the cultivated lands was supplied by the silt deposited annually by the Nile waters in the flood season. But now they cannot maintain the productiveness of the soil without artificial fertilizers, and are obliged to import them.

“ ‘If it takes nearly two acres of land to produce as much cotton or wheat as one acre yielded under the old system, the labor required is correspondingly greater which means that cost of production is proportionately increased.’ ”

These are startling statements and figures, and certainly deserve to be carefully considered. I do not profess to be able to speak with authority upon this subject. It is, however, clearly evident to even the casual observer that Egypt, without the water of the Nile, would soon become a wasteless desert. Granted that a sufficient water supply be given her, can she continue to feed her now more than fourteen million people, and furnish cotton and other export products of her soil, without the precious cargo of silt from the Abyssinian mountains? This, it would appear from the figures here given, cannot gain access to the soil, shut out as it is by the dams and barrages, when the water is flowing with great velocity. The silt thus being held in suspension which, under the basin plan, after the medium of transportation had disappeared, was left to enrich the soil.

Personally, I should be inclined to continue the use of the dams and barrages until it is definitely demonstrated that the original amount of silt by the old basin, or overflow system, becomes absolutely essential to best soil production.

But the people of Egypt have not alone been concerned over the fact that they have been compelled, since the installation of dams and barrages, to feed to their soil expensive fertilizer, but they have been wrought up to fever heat over the attempt, threat at least, made by the British to rob them of their "historic supply of water" from the Nile, as provided in their Ultimatum to the Egyptian government after the death of the Governor-General of the Sudan, Sir Lee Stack. This phase of the subject will be dealt with more fully in another chapter.

.

## CHAPTER IV

### MOSES—AN OUTSTANDING CHARACTER IN EGYPTIAN HISTORY

**B**EFORE taking up in chronological order the various kings, from Menes on down through the different dynasties to the present time, I wish to refer to a few outstanding persons to show the influence of Egyptian culture upon their lives. While those I shall mention were not Egyptians in the strictest sense of the word, they were all born and educated in Egypt except one, and the major part of his education was secured in this country and nearly the whole of his life was lived here. I refer to Joseph, who was sold into Egypt when he was about seventeen years of age. The first outstanding one among this group is Moses; the second in importance is probably his brother, Aaron, who was a few years his senior; the third, Miriam, their beautiful and accomplished sister; the fourth, Joseph, and the fifth, Joshua.

The fact that there were three children of the parents of Moses who were outstandingly great would naturally suggest rather unusual ancestors and parents. Such they were. Moses, we are told by Josephus, was a near descendant of Abraham, but seven times removed (of course, this relationship holds good as to Aaron and Miriam). He was the son of Amram, who was the son of Kohath, whose father, Levi, was the son of Jacob, who was the son of Isaac, who was the son of Abraham. Those who have given the subject of consanguineous marriage careful consideration, and many there are who have de-



voted much time to this subject, and reported adversely on such relationship, going so far as to advise that laws be passed forbidding marriages of persons who were first cousins (and such now is the law in many commonwealths in the United States), will have a difficult problem to solve and explain when the case of the parentage of Moses, Aaron and Miriam is taken into account; for it will be recalled that the father of these three persons, Amram, married Jochebed, his father's sister. "And Amram took him Jochebed his father's sister to wife; and she bare him Aaron and Moses." Exodus 6:20. This incident may be explained by them as culminating in a manner altogether exceptional. Be that as it may, the fact remains that the union of nephew and aunt resulted in the birth of three of the outstanding characters or personages in history. The records of these people, both Biblical and that recorded by Josephus, disclose the fact that they were magnificent in physical form, handsome of face, charming of manner, convincing in speech; that Aaron was a veritable Demosthenes and beautiful Miriam was a prophetess (teacher), while Moses, towering above both of them physically and intellectually, was a logician, a doctor of law, doctor of philosophy, and doctor of medicine probably; at least he was a skilled dietitian, and the foremost military genius of his time.

I do not know who reared Aaron and Miriam—probably the parents—but whoever it was did a mighty good job. As to Moses, both the Bible and Josephus agree that it was the daughter of Pharaoh who performed this task. Josephus gives us the name of this "daughter" as Thermuthis. I wish he had given us at the same time the name of her father, the King, for then we would have known the Pharaoh of the oppression of the Israelites; for it was

this same ruler, Thermuthis's father, who had issued the edict as to the slaying of all male children of a certain age. In the absence of the facts relative to the name of this king, and the length of his reign, etc., there has been much written. Of this fact, however, all historians are agreed: that he was born under the administration of a king "that knew not Joseph", and that Ahmes I. was the conqueror of the Hyksos (Israelitish) rulers, and that he, upon ascending the throne, began oppressing these people, who had increased numerically from seventy souls to more than a half million. There was, however, no disposition to remove them from the country, for they were regarded as a distinct asset by reason of their skill in all lines of labor, but rather, for the time being, to force them to re-double their activities in producing wealth for the ruler of the nation, and by reason of their constantly increasing numbers, to limit further their male population.

This change from the Shepherd, or Hyksos kings came, according to Josephus, about 1571 B. C., and this date tallies with the Biblical account as recorded in Exodus. Eighty years after this event, or about 1491 B. C., forbearance, in the matter of persecution, "ceased to be virtuous", and Moses returned from Midian (in Mesopotamia, now called Iraq, whither he had gone forty years before after a disagreement with Egyptian authorities) to deliver his race, now numbering more than six hundred thousand, from the bondage of these rulers. I have compared the views of the various authorities as to the time of this exodus and as to the Pharaoh then on the throne, and find they differ rather widely on the two points. My own notion of the matter is that it was in the time indicated above (1491 B. C.), and that Amenhotep II. was the king with whom Moses and Aaron had their arguments as to

their exodus, and likewise it was he who pursued Moses and his people to the Red Sea. I am of the opinion that Thermuthis was the daughter of Ahmes I., the king, as noted above, who overthrew the Shepherd kings. However, not a few authorities believe that Rameses II. was the king of the oppression, and that his son, Mes-en-ptah, was the Pharaoh on the throne at the time permission was given Moses to remove his people from Egypt to Palestine. It perhaps matters but little who of the various leaders was on the throne about these times; the point I am trying to make is that Thermuthis, the king's daughter, saw to it that Moses was given the very best educational advantages, and such must have been of high grade to have developed such a mind and character. I have always been of the opinion that a great university was operating in Egypt at that time, probably at Heliopolis, and that these five individuals mentioned above, with many others, took advantage of the opportunities offered at this seat of learning.

In tracing the history of Moses, by Josephus, it is interesting to note that he records the fact that when there was an invasion of an Ethiopian army into Egypt, from the south, the king persuaded Moses to head the Egyptian army against it, and that, the king's request being supported by that of his adopted mother, Thermuthis, he consented to so act, and that he displayed marked military ability and was successful in defeating the foreign foe, driving them back to their capital, Saba, which he later besieged and took. And thereby hangs another story, which tallies in a very important respect with the account recorded in Numbers 12:1: Josephus relates that while the Egyptian army was besieging this Ethiopian capital, which was wonderfully fortified, he was observed, while

carrying forward his plans to take the city, by the daughter of the king of the Ethiopians, Tharbis, who, taking note of his magnificent personal appearance and his military sagacity, sent to him her most trusted servant with a proposal of marriage, and the proposal was finally accepted on condition that the city be surrendered to him. His counter proposal, made on oath, was agreed to by the king, her father, and the marriage was promptly consummated.

Certain it is that he was not alone loyal to his oath in marrying the princess, but from the account of the domestic rupture, as recorded in the chapter and verse in Numbers above mentioned, he was loyal to her afterward, taking her with him when he returned to Egypt and when he left there, and this caused the family quarrel: "And Miriam and Aaron spake against Moses because of the Ethiopian woman whom he had married: for he had married an Ethiopian woman." It is not recorded what Moses said in reply to these protestations of his brother and sister, both of whom were his seniors, but of one thing we may be certain, and that is, he remained true to his vows. Whether he took Tharbis with him when he was forced to leave Egypt, soon after his return from the military expedition, it is not recorded. (In this connection I wish to note that Josephus makes no mention of the incident recorded in Exodus 2, to the killing of an Egyptian, but states that he was compelled to flee from Egypt owing to a jealousy which had sprung up among the Egyptians over his successful expedition in Ethiopia.)

Whether he did so or not (I think he did not), he was taken, we are told, into the family of Jethro, and was in due time given Zip-po-rah, a daughter of Jethro, a priest of Midian, in marriage.

This proved a splendid alliance, for in getting the priest's daughter he not only profited by a loyal wife, but as well secured the friendship of a most wise and sagacious father-in-law, Jethro.

This brief account disposes of three of my outstanding characters above mentioned. The story of Joseph, the fourth, is so well known as to hardly require mention, more than to say his bigness of heart and mind was due in a large measure to the influence of Egyptian nobility with whom he associated. The character which he developed and maintained throughout the one hundred and ten years of his life, ninety-three of which were spent in Egypt, is a criterion which might well be followed by every young man of today. The fifth and last of those mentioned, Joshua, was a military genius of the first magnitude, as well as being a great scholar. He was for many years the private secretary of Moses while they were on their long journey of forty years through the desert: "And Moses rose up, and his minister Joshua; and Moses went up into the mount of God" (Sinai). He, Joshua, was thus being prepared for the heavy responsibilities that were later to come upon him, for the mantle of his chief was to fall upon him. He was magnificent in his trust when this came to pass. He was born, reared, and educated in Egypt.

## CHAPTER V

### THE FOUNDER OF PRESENT DYNASTY—OUT- STANDING FACTS IN OFFICIAL HISTORY

**D**URING the reign of the founder of the present dynasty, Mohamed Ali, Egypt became the owner, and the Egyptian Sovereign the ruler, of the Sudan and the Nubian Valley of the Nile, with the desert surrounding same. This southern territory was extended southward under the reign of his grandson, Ishmael Pasha, the present king's father, until he controlled the territory of the White Nile and all of the basin between this river and the Blue Nile. All this valuable territory was held by Egypt until the Arab outbreak, led by the religious fanatic, Mahdi, in 1883, and which was finally subdued by the combined strength of the Egyptians and British military forces in 1898, the former furnishing the men and money necessary to carry on the successful campaign, while the latter, for the most part, furnished the military officers. These British officers were paid, however, from the Egyptian treasury. It is worthy at this point to observe the fact that, from this date on, it was to be known as the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan, and the territory from the Wadi Halfa on the north, to 2 degrees of north latitude on the south, was to be under the control of a British Governor-General, appointed by the King of Egypt after he had been selected for the post by the British. We shall have more to say regarding this corporation (Condominium), for it is a mighty interesting history, and reminds one of the story of

the two men who formed a partnership, one of whom had the money and the other one possessed the experience; in the end, however, the one with the experience had not alone the experience, but also all the money.

### PREHISTORIC AND HISTORIC EGYPT

Of what might properly be termed the prehistoric period, or period before 7000 B. C. to 5500 B. C., little is known. It is believed, however, that the delta was inhabited and cultivation carried on in this region for some distance up the Nile, probably as far as Luxor. It is also believed, from evidence found, that there were, previous to the date above indicated, many provinces or principalities, more or less independent of each other, and not given to that gentleness and mutual helpfulness which would have been found conducive to social, moral or commercial uplift. It is known that Menes, about 5500 B. C., founded, on the site afterward occupied by Memphis, a fortified and walled city. The tomb of this first king was found on the west bank of the Nile River at a town called, in English, Nakada, containing perhaps ten thousand people, half of whom are Christian-Copts.

I take it that no historian, of whom we have knowledge, attempts to go back into the history of Egypt beyond seven thousand years, although it may have been inhabited and its people made to thrive by reason of the fertility of the soil, watered by the life-giving river, the Nile, many years in advance of this time. However, there is abundant evidence to support the fact that 3400 years B. C. this land was peopled by a race of fine mould, both physically and mentally, possessed of knowledge in the Arts and Sciences, and enjoying a civilization at that time far

superior to that of any other country by thousands of years.

Indeed, I have almost come to the conclusion, after studying the marked evidences of the high degree of civilization as are being unearthed and shown to us by archaeologists, which obtained thousands of years ago, that, aside from electricity, steam, and perhaps a more intimate knowledge of the human organism, there are comparatively few things "new under the sun." Certainly, in many respects, their knowledge in matters of the Arts and Sciences surpassed that possessed by us today.

It is marvelous, beyond conception, even to our best mechanics and skilled artisans of today, how these obelisks, statues, sarcophagi, weighing hundreds of tons, could be transported from the Aswan quarries to the various parts of the country for a distance of nearly a hundred miles, and at rare instances seven hundred miles, and then erected to stand as originally placed for 5000 years without the swaying of one thousandth part of an inch. The one such at Heliopolis, on its original site, is believed to have been standing at the time Abraham, with his wife Sara, and his nephew Lot, made their first visit to Egypt, not long after their arrival from Ur, in Mesopotamia, and was, doubtless, one of the wonders which met the eyes of Joseph and Mary when, with the Babe Christ, they were fleeing from Herod, and stopped at Heliopolis for a night's rest and refreshments.

No artisan of today would pass lightly by the ability displayed by that mighty king, Cheops, and his skilled architects and master mechanics, in the construction of the Great Pyramid which bears his name, without due appraisal of their scientific attainments there displayed. Very much has been written of this and the many other



pyramids, but this one and its smaller sister, standing but a short distance west of it, are in so many respects superior to those built by other kings that a word or two with reference to them here may not be regarded as uninteresting.

I have looked upon their majestic appearance by moonlight and by sunlight, and indeed all hours of the day and the night, but never without contemplating the scene which must have transpired when, after due deliberation, His Majesty, Cheops the King, concluded to erect this monument, and called in conference for the first time his architects (I think there must have been more than one), surveyors (mathematicians, they were, too, of the highest type), and masons, and laid before them his general conceptions as to the monument desired. Neither of these two kings, brothers, Cheops and Khephren, were men of the ordinary type; they were the direct descendants of the best blood on both the paternal and the maternal sides of the family, and possessed added accomplishments as well, which made them men of the highest intellectual stamp.

I imagine the site for these monuments had already been agreed upon by the brothers before the artisans had been called in conference with them. At any rate, the site was found to be ideal, as it is located about eight miles southwest of Cairo and about the same distance north from the famed city of Memphis, on a plateau in area, I should say, about thirty acres ("Cheops" alone is said to cover thirteen acres), composed of limestone rock of almost incalculable depth.

The architects have now completed their drawings, and same have been submitted to King Cheops, for his is the lot of the great monuments to be erected, and they are

finally approved by him, and the greatest of all mechanical construction is begun. As has been well said, this Pyramid is notable for several things besides its unprecedented size. In its construction, the perfect knowledge of geometry of the architects is fully demonstrated. It stands exactly on the thirtieth parallel of latitude and the four sides face with geometric accuracy the cardinal points of the compass. Each side of the base is seven hundred sixty-four feet in length, and the vast monument contains, in round numbers, ninety million cubic feet of masonry.

Some further idea may be gathered of the monumental undertaking in the building of this structure, "Cheops", by the record left us by the Greek historian, Herodotus, between 450 and 418 years B. C., in which he tells us that it required ten years for the construction of the Causeway, and that one hundred thousand men were employed annually for three months each year for twenty years, besides the thousands employed as overseers and artisans continually during all these years, and that these day laborers (the hundred thousand) were employed during the overflow of the Nile, when farm work would of necessity be at a standstill. The service of this vast horde would be sufficient to transport enough stone to last those who were engaged in the construction work proper for the coming nine months, thus relieving them from this task to assume another of equal importance to the building of this monument, namely, the raising of food and supplies by tilling the soil, to enable these teeming thousands to be fed and clothed. I have seen no statistics as to the number constantly employed on this work, but I think it is safe to say that there were at least ten thousand engaged in this work continually every year for twenty years, and to this number they added another hundred thousand

men who were constantly engaged for a period of five years.

It will be thus seen that from the time this great project was conceived, planned, and the work commenced, thirty years were consumed—ten years in the construction of the Causeway and twenty years in the building of the Pyramid.

The estimate of different authors as to the time required in its construction, as well as the number of men employed, however, differ rather widely. The estimate as to the number of men employed has been placed as high as three hundred and sixty thousand, and the time thus engaged, twenty years. I should be inclined to believe that the figures of Herodotus, above mentioned, are the more nearly correct, for they tally with those given by the Egyptian priest, Manetho, as well as with the hieroglyphics here and there found about the temple areas and tombs.

Careful estimates have been made as to the weight of some of these blocks of stone used in the construction of "Cheops", and they are shown to weigh as much as one thousand six hundred tons. The marks yet to be seen upon them show that they were lifted by machinery, and it required two thousand men three years to remove one of those gigantic blocks from the quarry to the base of the Pyramid. Then it was to be put into its place. Have we machinery today powerful enough to lift such a mighty weight and deposit it in any place desired in a building in process of erection? I do not know. I doubt very much if such now exists. Again, all honor to the Egyptians! It seems reasonable to conclude, since Solomon was not alone wise but also educated, that he possessed an intimate knowledge of Egyptian history and was, there-

fore, cognizant of the plans of the building of the Great Pyramids, and patterned after the technique of King Cheops in having all material made ready for his temple before the structure contemplated was commenced.

"There was neither hammer nor any tool of iron heard in the house while it was in building." II Kings 6:7.

Let me say in passing, with regard to the building of the temple, that I never fully appreciated the great task performed by these master workmen until I visited, while on leave of absence during the summer of 1923, the Cedars of Lebanon in Syria, from which the timbers for the construction of this great building were secured, through the grace of King Hiram of Tyre. But remarkable as was the planning and building of this mighty edifice, reflecting as it did marked skill and ability upon the artisans who had to do with its construction, it does not, in my judgment, compare with the achievements of those skilled workmen employed by Cheops two thousand years before when building the Great Pyramid.

It will be recalled that it was while the architects were drawing the plans for the temple, that Solomon married the daughter of Pharaoh, and it was not unlikely that the plans followed by the great ancient architects of Egypt were discussed with his father-in-law and the Egyptian princess who later became his queen.

"And Solomon made affinity with Pharaoh, king of Egypt, and took Pharaoh's daughter, and brought her into the city of David, until he had made an end of building his own house, and the house of the Lord, and the wall of Jerusalem round about." I Kings 3:1.

The fact that five thousand years have elapsed since the building of the Great Pyramid, one of the "seven wonders of the world," subjected as it has been to earthquakes, the

scorching rays of a tropical sun, the varied winds and sandstorms, and that it still stands, not in partial ruins but complete in its majestic grandeur, save the coating of alabaster (which was removed by the hand of man), and the breaking away of the apex, as when it was completed, reflects the greatest possible credit upon the scholastic and artistic ability of these ancient Egyptians, its builders.

It is believed King Khephren is responsible for the Sphinx. It was chiseled from the limestone rock as found on its present site during his reign in the fourth dynasty, and it is thought the face of the statue was made, in its general outline and lineaments, to represent that of this king. Notwithstanding the violence which has been done to the nose and other parts of the face and head, the whole evidences strong classical features, decided elements of mental strength and manly character. I have never looked upon it that I was not at once reminded of the "Father of my Country", General (and afterwards President) George Washington, whom the British, during the Revolutionary War, called "Mr." Washington. Mariette, a reliable Egyptologist, has made careful measurements of various parts of the statue, and is responsible for the following dimensions: The entire height, from the pavement to the crown of the head, is sixty feet; length from the fore-paws to the root of the tail, one hundred eighty-seven feet; the ear is four and one-half feet; the nose, originally (now broken off), five feet seven inches, and the mouth seven feet seven inches in length. It is said that if one were to stand on the ear he could not stretch his hand as far as the crown of the head.

The entire statue, except the head and neck, has been covered with desert sand for the past fifty years, and has only within the past two years been brought to light. It

was found that this heavy weight had caused damage here and there over various parts of the body, and repair of these places has been made. No attempt, however, has been made to repair any part of the face or head. I understand none is contemplated. On this plateau upon which stand these great monuments, Cheops, Khefru and the Sphinx, is an elaborate temple area, and many splendidly preserved tombs, one of the latter, which has only come to light within the past two years—that of the tomb of the mother of Cheops, which, in not a few respects, is regarded as a greater discovery than that of Tutankhamen.

In the first place, she was the queen of a much greater ruler than Tutankhamen, Snefru. She was of royal blood herself, her father being a king. Then, as indicated, she was the wife of a king and the mother of a king. In the second place, the tomb and its contents were unusually interesting. As to the former, there was a most unusual departure from previous customs followed in its construction. A shaft, about four and one-half feet square, had been excavated through solid rock for a distance of one hundred feet, and then the tomb, for the reception of a large alabaster sarcophagus (supposed to contain the mummy), funeral furniture, gold plate and jewelry, had been chiseled out from the shaft. The history of this discovery, with its many things of historic, as well as those of great intrinsic value, has been read by many people, and it is, therefore, known that the body of this queen was not found in the sarcophagus. I shall not soon forget, when the official opening of this coffin was made, in the presence of the Egyptian Minister of Public Works, M. Lacau, Director of Antiquities, Dr. George Reisner, of the Harvard expedition, the discoverer of the tomb, and my-

self, the disappointment which was felt by all of us when the coffin was found absolutely empty. Of course, as indicated, the find was a rich one, viewed from any angle, but especially from the standpoint of science and art, as demonstrated when the tomb was cleared of its contents, as was done in advance of the opening of the coffin. Had the remains of the great queen been found, dressed in all the habiliments of her station, as was Tutankhamen, the discovery would have surpassed that of any such discovery yet made. There was still some hope that Her Majesty's remains might yet be found, as it was observed that a cutting had been made in the wall of the tomb facing the Great Pyramid (from which it is removed the distance of a city square), sufficiently large to admit a coffin of medium size, which was plastered over with cement. This sealed entrance, in due course of time, was opened, and revealed a Canopic jar containing internal organs of the dead queen, lying in an antiseptic, preservative fluid of the same chemical composition used for that purpose today. Doctor Reisner advances the theory that when the thieves or robbers entered her tomb at Dashur they were satisfied with the jewels found on the mummy and, perhaps, a gold coffin as well, which held the earthly remains of Her Majesty, and left all other valuables.

This action upon the part of thieves of that day does not differ from those of such law-breakers of today. Often do we read that in bank robberies, for instance, the thieves finding a sack containing five thousand dollars will, in their haste to get away, leave one such containing twenty thousand dollars lying hard by. At any rate, great values were left to be brought from her first tomb to the one prepared by her son, His Majesty King Cheops.

Dr. Reisner, in one of his last communiques issued with regard to the discovery, advanced the plausible theory that the king was never apprised of the fact by his servants who were charged with this most responsible task of the removal of the remains of his queenly mother from one tomb to another, that her remains had suffered violence at the hands of thieves, probably soon after her interment thousands of years before. To save the feelings of horror which this intelligence would bring upon him, he was permitted to view, perhaps, outward appearances of a satisfactory removal, and was thus led, by the objective evidence mentioned and the verbal report of his trusted employes, to believe that all was well with the mummy.

Another unusual discovery with respect to the contents of this tomb was the condition of the funeral furniture, made of wood, much of which was covered with a gold sheeting. Through the influence of fungi, caused by a few drops of water, which some time during a period of thousands of years had percolated down through the shaft, the furniture had almost completely decayed, so that but mere fragments were to be found. These were important, however, for they disclosed the character of the wood out of which it was made. Perhaps the most fortunate thing about this part of the discovery was the fact that the gold sheeting, holding together, had, as the furniture disintegrated, maintained for the most part its original contour, and the workmen were thus able to get an outline of its original shape, enabling them to rehabilitate nearly all of the pieces, including the Canopy, which is especially most gorgeous in its creation.

One, of course, could continue *ad infinitum* to speculate in regard to evidences of a superlative ancient civilization



here to be found. No one should, however, visit Egypt without taking the time to visit Luxor, and there see the ruins of Thebes and the Temple of Luxor, which are marvelous in construction and fine workmanship.

The Egyptian Public Works Ministry is doing everything possible to preserve these great creations from further ruin. They are all well described in books of travel, and should be studied by prospective visitors that they may fully appreciate the wonderful accomplishments of the men of those ancient days. After one finishes gazing upon the scenes at Luxor he should proceed for a distance of two hundred miles south on his journey to Aswan, where is located the dam by that name, and which, by the way, during the months of December, January, February and March is filled with storage water to a depth sufficient to cover all, except the very tops, of the ruins of these once magnificent temples—Isis, Hathor and Augustus. However, if the visitor will plan his itinerary so as to visit Aswan sometime during the summer months—April to November—he will be able to walk on terra firma all about these ruins, and, too, as this period of the year is somewhat removed from the regular tourist season, the railroads as well as the hotels give greatly reduced rates.

There is one other notable achievement among the many to which I would but simply draw attention, for it has seemed to me, after reading the account of it as it appeared to Herodotus, after giving it his personal inspection, the most wonderful and astounding of all the remarkable works of this ancient people. I refer to the Labyrinth, in the valley, or province of Fayoum, which was built during the reign of Usertesen III., probably about 2640 B. C., and which, as noted, was visited by

the "Father of History," Herodotus, when he was on his trip "around the world" some time after 450 B. C.—probably 400 B. C.

Being one of the most notable personages of the then known world, he was received doubtless, as such a one would be welcomed today, by a reception committee composed of the most scholarly and generally accomplished men of the country, who would accompany him on his visits to the various places of interest throughout the country. I am quite prepared to believe that he had already viewed with the greatest interest, and had taken careful note of all that he had both seen and heard concerning the Pyramids, the Sphinx, the great city of Memphis and the things of historic interest about Heliopolis and Alexandria, before visiting the Fayoum for a look upon the Labyrinth. I take it that in expressing his delight and astonishment to his reception committee and guides, he had about exhausted his vocabulary of adjectives before reaching this wonderful creation of which we are now speaking, for he exclaims, after visiting fifteen hundred apartments, those above the ground (there was an equal number, which he states he was not permitted to see), which were approached by passing through an almost infinite number of winding passages, the walls and ceilings of which were of the finest polished marble, and the courts adorned with pillars, likewise of marble, exquisitely polished: "I pronounce them among the grandest efforts of human industry and art," and then added: "All the temples of the Greeks did not equal it in cost and splendor." No wonder Solomon could construct a temple which brought from the rich and talented Queen of Sheba the exclamation, after viewing it, "the half has not been told," when the Cradle of Civilization—Egypt—had given him

such a rich inheritance from the brain of her master mechanics and architects. Again, all honor to the Egyptians!

Shall we not give to them again an opportunity to lead the world in art and science?

During my ministry in Egypt I frequently visited Fayoum over the week-end, being provided, as I always was, with a furnished house and servants by that prince of agriculturists, George Wissa Pasha, and was thus enabled to study, first hand, the remains of these ruins and enjoy, too, the delight of fishing and hunting in the beautiful lake which has existed there since the building of the national temple—the Labyrinth.

Then, too, this province, Fayoum, I found interesting because Joseph had much to do with restoring it to a productive agricultural district, for it was he who reconstructed the Canal, built in the time of Usertesen, nine hundred years before he was sold into Egypt, 1728 B. C., and which is to this day doing valuable service.

## CHAPTER VI

### MOUNT SINAI

SINCE Mt. Sinai and the peninsula upon which the mountain is located is Egyptian territory, and as such is under the administration of the Egyptian government, I was enabled to visit this most historic spot without securing leave of absence from my government. I had long desired to visit this famed spot where the "Ten Commandments", together with various other instructions for the guidance of the people, were delivered to Moses by God. I was able to make this visit under the most favorable circumstances in May, 1926, just after a like visit was concluded by the then Prime Minister of Egypt, Ahmed Ziwar Pasha. Indeed, it was he who planned my visit and gave to me such letters as afforded my entree where-soever presented. Too, I was given letters of introduction from the head of the church, the Greek Patriarch in Cairo, to the highest official in charge of the convent of St. Catherine.

This convent, our objective point, is located on the summit of the northwestern peak, called Sufsafeh, a gigantic mass of rock and soil about two miles long from north to south and approximately half a mile in width from east to west. Some writers have contended that the highest peak, Jubel Musa, marks the scene of the giving of the Law, but it is now, I believe, universally accepted that it was round and about the site of the convent that this most memorable event between God and man took place. It will be

recalled that God appeared here with Moses and talked to him directly, not face to face but in audible tones. And while Moses was not able to look upon the face of God, he was permitted to see His form as He there appeared, "and God wrote with his own fingers the Commandments given to Moses." This, it will be recalled, was done by God the second time by reason of the breaking of the Table of Stones upon which they were written, due to the anger of Moses over the back-sliding of his people during his prolonged absence on the Mount. The site of St. Catherine overlooks three river banks (called Wadies) in which the children of Israel might have, and doubtless did, encamp during their stay of about one year, before proceeding to the "Promised Land." The reader will find the 32d, 33d and 34th chapters of Exodus of interest regarding this Biblical event.

In our journey we endeavored, as nearly as possible, to pursue the course taken by Moses. We left Cairo via Heliopolis and traveled over the desert to Suez, a distance of about one hundred and forty miles, where we spent the night. On the following morning, after an early breakfast, we drove to a point on the Suez Canal where, by previous arrangement, a ferry boat awaited to carry us with our three machines across the Canal, and we were soon on our second day's journey across the desert, traveling the same for quite a distance in sight of the Gulf of Akaba, sometimes called, but improperly, the Red Sea. So long as we were hard by this body of water we had but little difficulty finding our trail, but in due course we were obliged to depart from the rather well-beaten track and take to the open desert, rather far removed from the Gulf, and found that the sand-storms had completely covered all evidence of a road-bed and rendered our procedure

most difficult, in spite of the fact that we had an expert guide. Our headway, too, was rendered more difficult by reason of deep sand drifts through which we must pass. We reached the end of our second day's journey, a mining camp, Abuzilema, a distance from Suez of one hundred miles, at 10:00 p. m. Here provisions had been made for our accommodation and our host was awaiting our arrival. We quickly retired for the night, and on arising next morning were given a good breakfast, and then we started on the third and last lap of our journey.

One of our machines could not plow successfully through the sand, and was compelled to return to the camp where we had spent the night. This action was not taken, however, until after a "counsel of war" had been held, for the Egyptian government does not permit an expedition to be made unless the party has at least three automobiles. This is a wise provision for it is a serious matter to be stranded in a great desert without adequate provisions in the way of transportation, water and food. The majority of the party was for returning to camp, but I could not see it that way. Here we were two-thirds of the distance to the historic Mount, and had two good machines and an abundance of water, gasoline, and other provisions. I proposed that, since one of the machines must return to camp, which was but a short distance away, they turn over to us all their excess water, gasoline and food. This proposition was finally agreed to and we proceeded on our way, arriving at our destination perhaps three hours after sundown. We were, like Moses at the River of Jordan, able to view the Promised Land, but were not permitted to enter that night. We could hear conversation, and the great Monastery was lighted up in a most attractive manner, but the one great gate

to the ancient structure was closed and there was absolutely no way of conveying my credentials to the proper official, so we were due for a stay in the desert until morning. I slept on the ground between blankets and was awakened about 4:30 a. m. by the most beautiful chimes to which I think I have ever listened.

At daybreak I made my way up the narrow, inclined road to the gate and called to a servant whom I saw some distance away. I held in my hand the letters of introduction and motioned for him to come to me. As soon as these documents were in the hands of the proper monk we were admitted and treated with great cordiality.

The buildings occupied are constructed for the most part of stone, and are of a most substantial character. The rooms are commodious and well ventilated, as well as clean. The library contains many thousands of volumes and manuscripts, written in the Hebrew, Greek, Arabic, Coptic and other languages, dating, not a few of them, from fourth century A. D. Some years ago a Russian professor, while examining the library, discovered what is thought to be invaluable documents of the original texts of the four gospels and some other writings hitherto unpublished.

During the last months of my incumbency in office a commission of five persons, eminent linguists from four Powers, two of whom were from the United States, applied to me to use my good offices to the end that it be permitted to spend some weeks, or months if necessary, examining this library in the hope that additional interesting data might be found that would throw added light on the books of the Bible. I was successful in securing for them the right to examine the library and to take copies of such documents as were found of special interest.

I have not up to this moment seen a report from the commission.

The auditorium where religious services are held is very commodious and contains many articles centuries old.

The summit of this mountain contains in all about three acres, a part of which is taken up by the buildings mentioned, some of which have been standing since the fourth century A. D. The remainder of the ground is carefully laid out in fruit trees and grapes, and a portion also is set aside for the raising of vegetables.

A very small area is provided for the burial of their dead. A very careful technique is followed in the disposition of the dead monks. They are buried about three feet under the earth without a coffin. Simply a shroud covers the remains. In five to six months the grave is opened and the remains, consisting of bones void of flesh, is lifted out and deposited in a well constructed mausoleum. This work is done systematically, the heads being placed in one special section while the bones of the legs and arms are put in another, and so on. One may be able to appreciate the many centuries the monks have kept vigil over this historic ground by viewing the many hundreds of remains of those who have there passed into the Great Beyond.

Those of us who believe the Bible to be the inspired Word of God find a peculiar and fascinating interest in visiting this historic mount, made especially sacred by the presence of God, and where the face of His servant Moses was made to shine by reason of his association with the Author of the Ten Commandments. Considered from all points, I think Mt. Sinai one of the most remarkable spots on the face of the earth. Aside from the facts relative to the situation, I may add that among the outstanding phys-



ical features of the place are three inexhaustible wells of water from which one may quench his thirst, and all this in a "tractless desert." This abundant supply of water affords all needed requirement for irrigation.

Between Abuzilema and Mt. Sinai we found two small oases which, by reason of water and tillable soil, are inhabited. Here they grow dates and a limited amount of vegetables, and raise a few sheep and donkeys. Recently automobiles have been driven from Jerusalem to Mt. Sinai along the route which Moses took in pushing forward to the "Promised Land", Palestine.

Finally, is it not a comfort to us who believe in the sacredness or truthfulness of the Bible, to realize that the discoveries made by archaeologists of buried cities, temples, statues, all mention of which is made in the Bible, conform to the account therein given? To me, my travels over Egypt, Palestine, Syria, and Asia Minor have strengthened my faith and belief in the Word as written in both the Old and New Testament scriptures. "Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life."

## CHAPTER VII

### CHRONOLOGY

FOR the chronology of the various kings and rulers of Egypt from Menes, the first king, who, with his successors, ruled about 3400 B. C. (according to Manetho, but in keeping with more recent data, believed to have been more nearly 5,500 years B. C.), to the time when Alexander the Great took possession of Egypt in 332 B. C., we are indebted to Manetho, a priest of Heliopolis, who wrote three books in the Greek language during the reign of Ptolemy II. about 250 B. C., in which he described in more or less detail these various rulers. (The spelling of names of kings by him, their pronunciation, as well as dates of their reigns, differ much from that of other authors.

It was this first king, Menes, who united Upper and Lower Egypt into one kingdom and who established the wonderful "White Walled" city of Memphis. The various ruins, which lie to the southwest of Cairo about ten miles, give further objective evidence of his activity along this line. This and the succeeding dynasty covered a period estimated at four hundred twenty years.

The third dynasty extended from 2980 to 2900 B. C., and it was during this period that King Zoser built the Step Pyramid at Sakkara, located about three and one-half hours' ride by camel from the great pyramid Cheops, near Cairo. This stone monument, Sakkara, still stands,

but is not nearly so well preserved as those above mentioned.

The fourth dynasty reached from 2900 to 2750 B. C., and embraced a series of rulers regarded as the most powerful of the Egyptian kings, including Snefru and Cheops, the latter the builder of the greatest of all the pyramids which bears his name, "Cheops", and "Khephren", builder of the second pyramid of Gizeh.

The fifth dynasty, from 2750 to 2625 B. C., had among its rulers Nuserre, Schure and Annos, or Unis, the latter the last king of this dynasty. Dissensions then began to arise among those in authority—the priests.

The sixth dynasty came into being and extended from 2625 to 2475 B. C. Among the kings of this dynasty, which lasted in all about 150 years, were Teti, Meri-re Pepi I., Merenre Ment-em-sof, and Nefer-Ke-re Pepi II. At the close of the sixth dynasty there was a more or a less complete breaking up of the monarchy and civil strife was in the ascendancy, and the country was apparently divided into states or provinces ruled over by petty governors or kings. This state of affairs continued for about four hundred and seventy-five years, when Amenemhet came into power, and by his marked statesmanlike ability succeeded in reuniting the kingdom and brought the country into a prosperity which it had never hitherto enjoyed. Art and literature were encouraged, and great building improvements were made throughout the entire kingdom of Upper and Lower Egypt.

Thus the twelfth dynasty continued for about two hundred and twelve years and counted among its prominent rulers at that time the founder, Amenemhet I., Sesostris I., Amenemhet II., Sesostris II., Sesostris III., and Amenemhet III. and Amenemhet IV.

About the close of this dynasty the civil strife had so developed that the kingdom was again broken up and was ruled much as in the sixth dynasty, by many kings. This chaotic or variable condition continued for a little more than two hundred years, during the latter part of which time Egypt was controlled and ruled by Syrian Bedouins of the Semitic race, known as Hyksos or Shepherd kings (XV and XVI dynasties). It was during the reign of these Shepherd kings (Semites) that Joseph (likewise of the Semitic race) found favor in Egypt and was able thus to succor his family during the famine in Palestine. They were also in authority when Abraham and Sarah visited this land about two hundred years before.

Beginning with the close of the sixteenth dynasty in 1580 B. C., and for a period of nearly four hundred years, (1580-1090 B. C.) Egypt became a "New Empire." Owing to the tribute paid to her by foreign States she was enabled to rehabilitate her dilapidated buildings and construct monuments of the most imposing kind; particularly did the rulers of this period lavish wealth on their monuments and buildings in Thebes, the capital.

Among the great kings who occupied the throne of Egypt during this period of four hundred years, extending from the seventeenth to the twenty-first dynasty, may be mentioned, Amosis (Ahmose) Amenophis I., (Amenhotep) Amenhotep II., (known also as Amenophis II.), (it is believed by some authors that it was during his incumbency of office that the exodus of the Jews took place, "the Pharaoh who knew not Joseph"), Kemale-Hatshepsut, a Queen, Thutmosis I., Thutmosis II., Thutmosis III., one of the most astute rulers of history, Thutmosis IV., who reigned for nine years (1420-1411) (and who, during this period, is said to have carved the

Sphinx at Gizeh), Amenophis III., who ruled thirty-six years, (1411-1375 B.C.) and who in every material manner added to the glory of his kingdom. He was succeeded by his son, Amenophis IV., who later took the title, or name of Akhnaton I. It was he who established a new religion, becoming the first monotheist. He removed his capitol from Thebes to Tel el Amarna.

Amenophis IV., referred to and known as Akhnaton, was the father-in-law of Tut-ankh-amen of recent fame, whose tomb was discovered in 1922 by Lord Carnarvon and Mr. Howard Carter. It may be here stated upon good authority that Tut-ankh-amen was by no means a great ruler. He married one of the superbly well-reared daughters of Amenophis, or Akhnaton, and so long as this pious and unwarlike ruler lived he maintained himself with decorum, but was vacillating in his religious notions, and has only become well known by reason of the fact that his tomb, but so recently discovered and so well advertised, contained treasures which had only in a small degree been molested. Parenthetically, it may be stated, upon the best authority, that no further molestation of the most valuable articles found in this tomb was due to the fact that within a few hours after these thieves had entered the sacred precincts of this tomb they were discovered, and summarily dealt with in a manner obviating any further necessity as to worry about their future acts. Indeed, only one of the four chambers had been invaded. Two others could easily have been, as both contained unsealed apertures the size of a window three by four feet. But the dead room, containing the great sarcophagus in which the remains of the king were found inclosed in a coffin of solid gold, clothed and surrounded by all the insignia of his great office, had not been entered.

As to just how this discovery impressed me, at the time I was permitted to view it, upon two different occasions, by reason of the graciousness of Lord Carnarvon and Mr. Carter, may be described by reproducing here an article which I contributed to one of the Dayton, Ohio, newspapers at the request of the editors, soon after my return from the tomb to Cairo:

“Cairo, Egypt, January 25, 1923.

“Some of my friends in America have been good enough to say that they have hitherto enjoyed articles written by me when on my globe-trotting expeditions, and have appealed to me to give them some articles on Egypt.

“It is proper in this connection for me to state that my relations with the Government of the United States are quite different today as compared with those of former times. A diplomatic representative is supposed to be a good listener, and not too much of a talker or writer. I have heard of men who have been—for a short time—in the diplomatic service, who were at least good talkers, some loquacious. However, I have no politics to discuss in this article, but shall confine myself to a few things which I think will be of interest to your readers, and some things that are now attracting the attention of the scientific world and the curiosity of the remainder of the reading world, who cannot be included in this class.

“I refer to the discovery in the Valley of the Kings, at Thebes, made by Lord Carnarvon and Mr. Howard Carter, of Tut-ankh-amen, one of the famous heretic rulers of the eighteenth dynasty, about 1500 B. C. It is of interest to observe that no less an authority than Mr. Arthur Weigall, who was for years inspector-general of antiquities to the Egyptian government, and who died in 1906, revealed the burial-place of the father-in-law of this king, Akhna-

ton, takes the position that Tut-ankh-amen was the Pharaoh who lived and ruled at the time of the exodus of the children of Israel from Egypt and with whom both the Lord and Moses had quite an experience. This belief is, I think, no longer entertained.

"This discovery, among other things of interest, demonstrates the reward which comes to intelligence, patience, perseverance and perspicacity, for it should be known that this remarkable man, Mr. Carter, has been engaged in diligent search for just such a find as this for sixteen 'long years,' and it likewise should be observed that no such costly search could have been carried on without a liberal exchequer be furnished, and in this case Lord Carnarvon provided this necessity.

"These two men combined all the essentials necessary for the carrying forward of just such research work as brought to fruition this now world-famed discovery.

"Through that most wonderful medium of general information and education—the press—the world has been apprised of this discovery, but since one's seeing is worth several readings, let me tell you that it is the opinion of the writer that it is the greatest discovery, up to this time, of the kind that has yet been made—nor is this all. Perhaps the words of the Queen of Sheba, after she had been shown about the resplendent and unsurpassed temple of King Solomon could with equal propriety be applied here as regards this discovery, when she exclaimed: 'The half has not been told.'

"For it must be recalled that up to this date the chamber of chambers, in which they expect to find the king's body and other most valuable effects of this ruler, has not been opened, but it is expected this will be done sometime the first of February. Lord Carnarvon is due to arrive in

Cairo the 25th of this month—January—and will then proceed to Luxor to get ready for the opening of this chamber of chambers.

“It was the privilege of the writer, accompanied by his daughter, Mrs. Robert H. Turner, at the invitation of Lord Carnarvon and Mr. Carter, to visit this tomb on January 5, and I shall endeavor to briefly describe the visit and what we saw.

“Before I attempt this, however, let me digress sufficiently long to observe that at Assiut is located an American college run under the auspices of the United Presbyterian church. This institution was established more than fifty years ago, and, like our American University at Beirut, is doing superlatively good work. Indeed, the English language is found inadequate to describe or relate the powerful good which these colleges here accomplish. It is the leaven which is leavening the whole lump of moral and religious things worth while through this, the oldest, and really the most naturally God-blessed country in all the world. (Mark you, I say ‘naturally’ so blessed.)

“Previous to this visit, I made an address before the Students’ Union of the American University at Cairo; and as the faculty at the college at Assiut had given me a pressing invitation to visit it and talk to their student body, I decided that this was a propitious time to do so. This invitation I accepted for January 3, and on this date I put in a full day at this institution, closing with attendance at a banquet at night. We were entertained here (Assiut) by our Consular agent, George Wissa Bey (now Pasha) and his charming family. It may be of interest to our people to know that my host lives in a mansion fully equal to the White House, and with just as sumptuous furnishings and even a larger retinue of servants. Don’t



think for a minute that the government furnishes this consular agent this lavishly appointed domicile.

"On the night of the third we left for Luxor, some two hundred miles distant from Assiut, four hundred and fifty miles plus from Cairo. There we were met by Doctor and Mrs. W. H. Philipps, whose guests we were to be on their private dahabeah (river boat). Here we lived until our visit about Luxor and Thebes was finished.

"I must not tire you longer with my doings in and about these places further than to say that it is of interest and importance for the official representative of the United States in a country to know the country to which he is accredited, and my visit was official, as well as social and educational.

"Now, back to the tomb. From Luxor we crossed the Nile by ferry and took donkeys, which had been previously provided for us, and proceeded with a guide, selected by the officials, to the tomb in question, a distance of between four and five miles. Let me say I am herewith sending you a photograph, which someone snapped and sent to me, of my first meeting with the discoverer of the tomb, Mr. Howard Carter.

#### A SALUTE IS FIRED

"Now, after an introductory talk with Mr. Carter, we proceeded to enter the tomb. I might say, however, that when my approach was noted, there was a salute fired by previous arrangement by the military, who were in attendance as guards at the tomb, and this brought Mr. Carter from the tomb to greet us upon our arrival. I am sending you also a snapshot showing Mrs. Turner and myself coming up from the tomb. I was admonished by my host that the tomb was hot, that the natural heat was



Left to right: Minister J. Morton Howell and  
Mr Howard Carter in front of the tomb of  
King Tut-ankh-Amen





augmented by the strong electric lights which were being used, so we discarded all superfluous clothing.

"I can hardly express my feelings when I entered the tomb, to recall that I was in a sepulcher which held the inanimate form of this king who lived and reigned three thousand five hundred years ago, and which likewise contained the inanimate objects which were utilized by this ruler. All these caused me to stop in awe.

#### SIZE OF CHAMBER

"I do not at this moment recall the actual size or dimensions of this first chamber (there are two which have so far been opened), but I should say that it was about thirteen to fifteen feet in length, and perhaps a little less in point of width, and literally filled with various articles of furniture, bric-a-brac, priceless vases, all forms of food provisions, such as meat and vegetables ready prepared for the table (the latter hermetically sealed in oval containers much in point of shape and size like that of an ostrich egg).

"I do not know of what material these containers are made, but the outside wrapping or material looked to me like heavy linen which had been carefully adjusted in roller-band fashion about the form of the container, and held in place with a material not unlike, in appearance, plaster paris. Indeed, this may have been the material used. If so, these people may have well understood how to hold in apposition a fractured bone by use of the plaster paris casts so long in vogue by surgeons of our times.

"I desire, however, for several reasons, to describe briefly some of these articles which greatly impressed me: first, their splendid preservation; second, their perfect workmanship, the magnificent art displayed in their con-

struction; third, the somewhat close resemblance to the most artful and well proportioned articles of the same kind which we find in our shops today.

"There is this exception: articles found here greatly surpass anything in magnificent and costly inlays that I have ever seen. I doubt very much, with all our up-to-date workers in fine metals, if there is one person who can construct one of these vases, cut from one solid piece of alabaster, as is found here.

#### VASE OF PERFUME

"One of these vases in question, of which there were three, contained perfume which, on being unstopped, still gave out its original odor. Think of it—and this after a lapse of nearly four thousand years!

"The throne chair, which is in perfect state of preservation, is an article of superlative beauty, inlaid with gold and other costly materials. There is some little damage to it caused by the metal thieves who, undoubtedly, entered this chamber soon after the burial of the king.

"Objective evidence of the fact that they were discovered in the theft of these valuables is convincing, because, first, it was observed where they had wrenched off pieces of gold here and there from furniture, pulling the wood in the direction of their traction on same, and the further and more important fact that they left almost countless amounts of gold which, had they had time, they would undoubtedly have taken.

#### TWO STATUES OF KING

"For instance, we find two statues of the king, one upon either side of the entrance door to the chamber which is yet to be opened, upon which are found slippers of gold

and collars of the same material, inlaid upon ebony. In their endeavor to escape without being apprehended, it was found that they had dropped various articles of value here and there upon the floor of the tomb.

"It is believed that these thieves were caught at or near the time after this tomb had been entered, and were executed, because the tomb was found, upon this discovery, to have been carefully closed with the usual cement and stone coverings and sealed by the seal of the king.

"Now let me come back again to a little further description of these articles seen. There are several chairs and footstools, all of exquisite beauty, and I shall mention but briefly some of these. As to the chairs, one in point of size, only smaller than the throne chair, is made of ebony; the back is curved somewhat, and on the front of the back are two figures of the god Horus, under winged sun discs and emblems of eternity; on the back are hieroglyphics and cartouche of the king.

"The feet of the chair are fashioned like lion claws; all the emblems, inscriptions and hieroglyphics seem to be of solid gold, while the seat is circular with golden bands.

"The footstools are, in general size and contour, not unlike those in use today, but they, like the other articles of furniture described, are for the most part made of ebony, and are things of artistic beauty, inlaid with gold and precious stones.

### MUCH RARE CLOTHING

"Clothing and robes of all kinds are to be seen in rather a bad state of preservation; however, it is believed by preservative treatment these garments can be saved. The most notable, perhaps, among these articles, is the king's robe of darkish brown color, with beautiful collarettes and

insignia, which still show their patterns, and it is believed, as indicated, that they can be treated in such a way that they again may be placed in their original form upon the robes. If this can be done, this will show for the first time in history the magnificence of dress used by these rulers.

"There are three beds or couches, two as I recall, of the same size, and one much smaller, which latter, it is believed, was used by one of the princes or princesses of the family. These are exquisitely carved and inlaid with precious metals, and all are in a perfect state of preservation.

#### KING'S CHARIOT

"The chariot used by the king was to me a most interesting thing; the wheels in point of diameter are much like those found on the front wheels of our vehicles today. The front wheels are somewhat smaller than the rear ones. The body of the chariot is well proportioned, and in shape resembles those used on our finest sleighs in America; but, like the chairs described, gold and inlays are everywhere present, so that one is impressed by its great beauty. Someone asked me as to the character of the tires used upon these vehicles. I really cannot even yet answer this question, but am of the opinion that the felly used was of wood and the tire was of leather.

#### ATTEND OPENING

"As I have heretofore indicated, the chamber in which it is expected the mummy of the king, with articles of great value will be found, other than those mentioned, is to be opened up some time within the next three weeks, and as I have an invitation from Mr. Carter for Mrs. Howell and myself to see this new chamber, I may have

more to say later with respect to this already well-known and marvelous discovery.

"It may be of interest to your readers to know that there are many Americans here at this time and, from reports, many more are to follow.

"Not long since, Mrs. Howell and I gave a large reception in honor of Colonel and Mrs. George McClellan, ex-mayor of New York, and our good friend and fellow-townsmen, Judge C. W. Dustin, who arrived the day before. We were happy to have had him with us on this occasion. More than a hundred attended this reception to meet these distinguished guests—princes, the king's cabinet, Lord and Lady Allenby, the Diplomatic Corps, and the elite of the social circles in Cairo."

"Cairo, Egypt, January 25, 1923."

It is indeed little wonder that the world has been so stirred over these discoveries, after the lapse of nearly three thousand five hundred years, when we have thus been permitted to look upon these "life-like" things. In my opinion, no more worthy men could have been found to have carried on this sacred trust (for it is a sacred trust when one is dealing with the last earthly remains of a human being and the treasures which he "left in trust") than these two men, Lord Carnarvon and Mr. Howard Carter—both of them men of honor, tenacity of purpose, and having in mind in this work the scientific good of humanity. The contents of the tomb have not been exploited, but upon the other hand, great care has been taken to secure the preservation of every article, to the end that no one person or persons may profit, but that all the people who may wish, and have the opportunity, may look upon them. It seems so inharmonious with things, as one thinks they should be, that this philanthropist and



man of affairs, Lord Carnarvon, should be so prematurely taken without being permitted to know the results of this great discovery. I watched with the greatest assiduity the progress of his case, and when I was told by his physician-in-chief that, while the erysipelatous condition was subsiding pneumonia had developed, I felt his case was helpless and hopeless.

But we have made a digression from our subject; let us get back to our ancient history. It was during this period of four hundred years, to which reference has been made, and during the nineteenth dynasty, which is believed to have lasted for one hundred and fifteen years, 1315 to 1200 B. C., and commenced with Ramses I., followed by Sethos I., Ramses II., Amenephthes, Sethos II., Amen-meses and Septah, that great events continued to take place. Of the seven rulers of this dynasty Ramses II. stands out preeminently; indeed, he is believed to have been the greatest ruler of all the kings before or since his time. He came to the throne young in years, for he ruled sixty-seven years.

There is to be found no king, before or since, where both subjective and objective evidences disclose such varied greatness as shown by him during his long reign. Indeed, fully one-half the temples unearthed, and now in evidence, date from his service as king, and they spread over an extended area, from Memphis, which is but a short distance (ten miles) from Cairo, and extending to Luxor. Among his greatest monuments or temples are Abu Simbel, carved entirely out of solid rock. This is a masterpiece of architecture and reflects great credit upon the designer and builder. Then we have the great temple of Amon, at Karnak, to which, more than any other king, he contributed lasting embellishments.

The mummy of this great ruler, Ramses II., is to be looked upon in the great museum at Cairo, where likewise are to be found all the kings of this and other dynasties thus far found. As noted, Ramses II.'s reign reached the high-water mark in all that went to make a great nation in those days, and then, as now, there were cycles or periods of progress and then decline.

The twentieth dynasty followed the administration of Ramses II., was ushered in with Seth-nakht upon the throne and, under the succeeding Ramses, lasted for one hundred and ten years.

This brings us to the twenty-first dynasty which lasted, under various rulers of insignificance, for a period of one hundred and forty-five years. The twenty-second dynasty came into being again with rulers of small mental concept from Libyan origin. It was during this dynasty, 930 B. C., that Shosenk I. attacked Jerusalem, during the reign of Rehoboam, son of Solomon, captured the city of Jerusalem and secured, by plunder, the valuables from Solomon's Temple. (It is interesting in this connection to read the fourteenth chapter of II Kings; "Shosenk", the Egyptian king above mentioned, is Shishak of the Bible.)

The twenty-third dynasty lasted but twenty-seven years, and was divided between two Ethiopian kings of small mental caliber.

Parenthetically, in this connection, it is of interest to note that Solomon, only a few years before the overthrow of Jerusalem, married the daughter of Pharaoh in 1014 B. C. The name of his father-in-law, the king, it is believed by some writers, was Pinotem I. After the death of Ramses XII., about 1090 B. C., he was succeeded by a high priest of Amon-Herihor, who ruled for but a short

time, when Pinotem, a Theban priest-king, was proclaimed king of Egypt.

The twenty-fourth dynasty saw Bocchoris, son of one of the kings of the twenty-third dynasty, on the throne. His rule was short, he being captured by Sabakon of Ethiopia, who caused him, it is said, to be burned alive.

The twenty-sixth dynasty saw the Ethiopians in power with Sabakon on the throne. He was succeeded by three different rulers during this dynasty, one of whom was Tirhakah of the Bible (II Kings 19:9). Later the throne went to Tanutamun, son of Shabako. This ruler's reign ended the dynasty, lasting from 663 to 525 B. C. It was during this dynasty that Egypt again rehabilitated herself. She took on a new impetus along art, literature, and the known sciences. Of the six sovereigns of this dynasty, Necho would seem to have been the keenest, the most intelligent, and the most alert to Egypt's interests. It will be recalled that it was this ruler who fought the battle of Megiddo against Josiah, King of Judah. Necho had interests both in Palestine and Syria. The Babylonians started a war against Syria, and Necho, being anxious to save his interests in Syria, joined them in a battle against the Babylonian army. Josiah, although for the most part a devout king with good judgment, permitted himself, against what appeared to have been good counsel, to attack Necho at Megiddo, and in this battle was mortally wounded. Necho then proceeded on his journey to aid Assyria, but was defeated at the battle of Carchemish by Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon. Quite a little account of this history may be found in II Chronicles, chapter 35. I have several times been over these battle-fields, and I have here, as in all other historical places in these countries adjacent to Egypt, as well as in Egypt

itself, found my Bible reading of the greatest value. "Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life."

Just a few more words with respect to this wide-awake king, Necho. It was he who, perhaps, first saw the possibility of a Suez Canal by cutting through, as was later done by Ferdinand de Lesseps, November 17, 1869, this narrow strip of land connecting Africa with Asia. At least, it was he who made an attempt, by way of a canal, to connect the Red Sea with the Nile and thereby reach the Mediterranean. We are informed by Herodotus that this procedure was being carried out with great effectiveness, many thousands of laborers being engaged on the excavations at one time, when one like unto, I take it, the Witch of Endor, came along, proclaiming to him that the project was really against the interests of Egypt, and would redound only to the profit of Persia. This canal was later completed by Darius, of which only a few remaining monuments erected at the time of its completion remain.

The fear of Persia which obtained during the reign of Necho was proven well founded, for the last king of this, the twenty-sixth dynasty, Psammetichos III., in 525 B. C., was defeated at the battle of Pelusium by King Cambyses of Persia, and hence the twenty-seventh dynasty commenced with a Persian monarch on the throne. The twenty-seventh, twenty-eighth, twenty-ninth, and thirtieth dynasties alternated more or less between the Persian and Grecian nations.

In the beginning of the year 332 B. C., Alexander the Great took possession of Egypt and founded the city of Alexandria on the Mediterranean which bears his name, and made there a great port and a center of commerce for

the world. Previous to this time Darius, King of Persia, controlled Egypt and all its adjacent territory. Darius was defeated in every battle with Alexander, and was pursued by this great warrior until his entire empire was lost, and his life as well. Alexander, upon leaving Egypt, appointed one of his trusted generals as Governor, with his capital at Alexandria, and from this time on for three hundred years this city was made by all odds the most important one of the realm. It is of interest to note that after the death of Alexander, which occurred in Babylon when he was but thirty-two years of age, his remains, at his request, were brought (by caravan) back to Egypt for burial, a distance of a thousand miles, the ceremony to take place, according to his will, at Siwa, an oasis in northern Africa, where the temple of Jupiter Ammon was located, and where, at his own behest before he left Egypt, he had been pronounced the son of God.

I have found myself greatly interested in the report of various authors as to the famous funeral procession of this dead general. Abbot, the historian, tells of it in a brief but fascinating style, in the following language:

“A very large and elaborately constructed carriage was built to convey the body. The spokes of the wheels were overlaid with gold, and the extremities of the axles, where they appeared outside at the center of the wheels, were adorned with massive golden ornaments. The wheels and axle-trees were so large, and so far apart, that there was supported upon them a platform or floor for the carriage twelve feet wide and eighteen feet long. Upon this platform there was erected a magnificent pavillion supported by Ionic columns and profusely ornamented, both within and without, with purple and gold. The interior constituted an apartment, more or less open at the sides, and

resplendent with gems and precious stones. The space of twelve by eighteen feet formed a chamber of no inconsiderable size, and there was thus ample room for what was required within. There was a throne, raised some steps and placed back upon the platform, profusely carved and gilded. It was empty; but crowns, representing the various nations over whom Alexander had reigned, were hung upon it. At the foot of the throne was the coffin, made, it is said, of solid gold, and containing, besides the body, a large quantity of the most costly spices and aromatic perfumes, which filled the air with the odor.

"On the four sides of the carriage were sculptured figures raised from a surface, representing Alexander himself, with various military concomitants. There were Macedonian columns and Persian squadrons, and elephants of India, and troops of horses, and various other emblems of the departed hero's greatness and power. Around the pavilion, too, there was a fringe or network of golden lace, to the pendants of which were attached bells, which tolled continually with a mournful sound as the carriage moved along. A long column of mules, sixty-four in number, arranged in sets of four, drew this ponderous car. These mules were all selected for their great size and strength, and were splendidly caparisoned. They had collars and harness mounted with gold, and enriched with precious stones."

The author goes on to state that before the procession set out from Babylon, an army of guides and pioneer workmen went forward to make secure all bridges and to otherwise prepare all roads over which the funeral procession was to pass. Like the great throngs which followed the funeral train of the lamented presidents, Lincoln and Harding, great crowds were present all along the

route to witness this funeral march. It is said that a great monument was erected over his place of burial and was intact for fifteen hundred years, but, like the burial place of Cleopatra and Mark Antony, in Alexandria, no trace of it remains at this time.

I think we may naturally conclude that, since his death and place of interment were heralded over the then entire world, as few such monarchs passing had been so proclaimed, and the wealth of his burial outfit, gold coffin and emblems or insignia, likewise almost universally known, his remains, like those of the great queen, Cleopatra, and Mark Antony, remained only so long, as originally placed, as a strong, reliable guard stood watch night and day over them. But to me the reliable historical fact that these outstanding events to which I have above alluded were enacted in Egypt, and in the great city of Alexandria, the living monument to the famous conqueror and general, has always made them of greatest interest.

Greeks, from this time on, came in great numbers to Alexandria, and it became not alone the most important seaport of the world, but it became the equal of Greece herself in culture. Parenthetically, it may be added that magnificent samples of this Greek culture and refinement obtain here today. The Greek colony has, times without number, shown its loyal, patriotic, Christian spirit by its help and care of the more than a million refugees who came to Greece after the World War. Not alone have they cared for these helpless foreign peoples, but they have contributed largely to the relief of those of their own country. Some of the most beautiful and cultured Greek women in the world live in this commercial capital of Egypt.

In this connection I wish to refer to a meeting in which I participated at Alexandria, on Sunday, March 18, 1923, as showing the grateful feeling of the Greek Colony toward America for the service which the latter had rendered to the Greek people and to its million refugees who were brought to Greece following the Great War.

Some ten days before this meeting in question was scheduled to take place I received a letter from Mr. Salvago, President of the Greek Community, in which he asked me to be good enough to receive a committee of prominent Greek gentlemen to discuss the propriety of holding a meeting in Alexandria, at which time the Greek Colony, from all over Egypt and the Sudan, could express their appreciation, through me, to the American government and its people, for the great material blessings which the American people had been pleased to extend to them.

After the presentation of this proposition, I observed that I had been indirectly informed that the meeting which they proposed to hold would have some political significance, and, should this be the case, I should, of course, be obliged to decline; that there was already too much animosity existing among the various communities, and nations as well, with regard to the causes and to the effects of this war. They replied that no political significance was intended by the meeting; that they, simply out of gratitude to the American people, desired to give it expression. I replied that, with that understanding, I should be glad to accept their invitation.

Arrangements were immediately commenced for this meeting. It was attended by many hundreds of people, and I have thought the speeches on this occasion would be of interest, as showing the spirit manifested by this fine



Greek colony, as well as showing the attitude of what I regarded the feeling of the American people respecting this war and its results. I herewith append an address by the Hon. Georges Roussos, former Greek Minister to the United States, and likewise the address upon this occasion by Mr. Michel C. Salvago (President of the Greek Community), and my reply:

ADDRESS BY GEORGES ROUSSOS, FORMER GREEK MINISTER  
TO UNITED STATES:

"Your Excellency: The representatives of all the Greek Colonies in Egypt and the Sudan are before you.

"They are assembled here from every corner of this country to express their deep gratitude to the people of the United States of America for the splendid proof of solidarity shown to Greece, their mother country, in the most tragic period of her history.

"During the war, Greece heard high principles proclaimed. She accepted them as genuine, and thereupon cooperated whole-heartedly, nay, staked her very existence, in the common struggle to vindicate those high ideals. When the settlement came, she began to realize that, more particularly amongst the Continental peoples, the old national prejudices still predominated, despite wartime assurances. Nevertheless, she preserved her illusions and continued her heavy sacrifices.

"Finally, Greece was left to struggle on alone. In her exhausted condition, the burden left to shoulder was crushing. Utter weariness enfeebled her continued efforts. At last, help failing, she could do no more, and the on-lookers allowed her to be counted out.

"The result was dreadful. Over a million of her children from Anatolia, Pontus, and Thrace, were obliged to

flee from their homes and to abandon practically their entire worldly possessions to avoid ruthless extermination.

"Not only were these ruined exiles suddenly torn from their birthplaces around which all their affections centered, and the scenes of an immemorial past, but families were brutally murdered. Heartbroken fathers sought in vain for missing wives and daughters. Mothers were parted from their children.

"This pitiable human avalanche poured into free Greece, already impoverished by her prolonged sacrifices. Nearly the entire population of the country, destitute and helpless, had to be provided for.

"The enormity of the tragedy seems not to have been entirely understood by the nations of Europe. Still suffering from the evils of the war, and tired by the struggle, some European peoples have lost their keenness of sentiment. Otherwise, it is impossible to explain how the compulsory exchange of population ever came to be accepted without protest as a principle of international law.

"In her misery, Greece felt herself once more alone. She was forgetting America—the relief came from there. Missions of men and women came, bringing with them not only the material help to save the body, but also the charming manner of giving which comforts and warms the heart. Near these noble men and women, the unfortunate refugees have recovered their confidence in a better future. Demoralizing despair and multitudes of resulting horrors were thus averted at the critical time.

"There is a very beautiful explanation behind the fine example set by the American people. Their noble conduct was the inevitable outcome of their high conception of life and its duties.

"Anticipating the nations of Europe, the people of the United States have intensively cultivated the idea of human solidarity. Beginning with themselves, they have inspired the notion of dignity in the modest workman by securing a decent life for him, by instilling the ambition to become useful to the community, and by enlisting his active cooperation.

"America has equalized her citizens and recognized only an aristocracy of sheer merit and talent, irrespective of mere birth.

"She has purged religion of every kind of formalism, retaining only the great humanitarian principles which are the substance of it. The result has been the intense human love which overflows the heart of every American.

"This great feeling of love explains the moving acts of generosity which characterize the people of the United States.

"Whilst directly profiting by their liberality in our present national distress, we see the grandeur of their activity only from our personal point of view. We must take a wider outlook in order to realize its general importance.

"Americans rightly believe that it is through the cultivation of human solidarity, accomplished not as an act of charity, but as a duty, creating moral bonds among the nations of the world, that humanity will achieve the elimination of the primitive and sordid strife of selfish interests which merely perpetuates misery and hatred. When this idea of solidarity has thoroughly permeated international life the present ferocious egotism is to disappear.

"The attainment of this desirable end will, of necessity, entail a long and bitter struggle. But such a noble idea must eventually triumph over selfish interests which use violence and produce wanton destruction and misery.

"The future has become more hopeful, now that America leads the way. We are encouraged in that belief because we feel that the American people have been actuated throughout by these lofty sentiments.

"They participated in the great war for the sake of a moral idea. Victory having been secured for this ideal, America retired from the field free from any mutual hatreds, and is again the friend of all nations.

"The people of the United States have become the heralds of a conception of love as a regulator of international relations, and have thus very materially promoted that real civilization in which egotism has no place.

"This very practical American apostleship, through example, has already achieved results which encourage the hope that bewildered humanity will learn to adopt the principle of love as the door to happiness.

"Believing in this conception, I was more than happy to hear that American missions have decided to extend their educational work to Greece. They have begun with the reopening in Athens of the American School for Girls from Smyrna.

"I am glad, because I am sure that by this educational cooperation Greece will acquire some of the numerous great characters I had the good fortune to meet in America during the years (the best of my life) I spent there.

"I refer to these noble men and women who have created the high ideals which stamp Americans and make them act as they do.

"By the emulation of their noble qualities, Greece will become the propagator in the Near East of the high American ideals; that is to say, continue her historical work and participate in the glory of the people of the United States.

"Your Excellency, for all that your people have done, for what we know they will still do, we cannot find words adequate to express our intense gratitude. We limit ourselves to exclaiming, from the bottom of our hearts: 'Glory and happiness to the people of the United States.'

—"Communaute Hellenique D'Alexandrie."

ADDRESS OF MR. MICHEL C. SALVAGO, PRESIDENT OF THE  
GREEK COMMUNITY OF ALEXANDRIA:

"Your Excellency:

"It is my great privilege and pleasure today, in the presence and with the full sanction of the representatives of all branches of the Greek communities of our Chambers of Commerce and all the important associations and corporations of the Greek Colonies in Egypt and the Sudan, to present this address to you.

"We request you to hand it to your Government as an expression, as a testimony of the deep gratitude felt by all Greeks of these countries towards the great and noble American people for their humane efforts to succour our unfortunate fellow countrymen, our suffering brethren, not only during those terrible days of the disaster in Asia Minor, but also during the period which followed when their munificence saved thousands of human beings from certain death.

"Not even the horrors of the great war, not even the sufferings and the misfortunes which for five long years overwhelmed Christendom, nothing, I am sure, could be more awful to contemplate than the mournful exodus of thousands upon thousands of aged men and women, of mothers and their little ones, of invalids, even of wounded men driven from their ancestral dwellings and cast adrift without food or shelter upon the mercy of a cruel fate.

"Then it was, Sir, that a mighty hand stretched across the great ocean to offer help to those deprived of every means of support. Then it was that the people of the world's greatest republic nobly came forward to aid the homeless and helpless in every possible manner.

"Once again did your people assume the sacred duty of missionaries of kindness, of philanthropists; once again did they put into practice that loveliest of Christian virtues—charity toward those in distress.

"You may rest assured, Sir, that our beloved country will not forget the immense debt of endless gratitude toward those who, in her day of mourning, remembered so signally the terrible distress of our brothers, so many of whom met their fate.

"Nor shall we fail when we educate our children, when we teach them the history of our land, to dwell upon the sad pages which have cast such a shadow over many another glorious country, and remind them of the splendid act, the generous proceeding of your countrymen.

"When we teach them that gratitude is one of the greatest of virtues, we shall have before us the example of what America has done for Greece, that the Greece of tomorrow, like that of today, may keep bright and indelible in her memory the recollection of one of the noblest actions to be found in the pages of history."

REPLY OF DR. J. MORTON HOWELL, AMERICAN MINISTER  
TO EGYPT:

"Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen:

"I assure you that neither the government of the United States nor her people shall fail to hear of the expressions of lofty sentiments and deep-seated gratitude which have been so fittingly uttered today by your hon-

ored and distinguished spokesmen, for what America has been pleased to do for your people during the stress of war and the sequels resulting therefrom.

"Your Chairman has graciously referred to the action of the American government in entering the World War for the salvation of Constitutional government and the preservation of certain fixed principles of international law and decency, and that after the Armistice was signed—the war over—we retired to our own soil and there in every human way endeavored to lend aid and succor to those peoples and nations bleeding from the terrors of the conflict on this side of the Atlantic.

"This was, and is, our conception of duty, and I assure you, our entire citizenship sympathizes with your people—indeed, all peoples who have been called upon to suffer the pangs of body and mind as the result of this awful, cruel catastrophe.

"The people of our great republic are keenly alive to the fact that few, if any, of the nations, have produced greater statesmen, philosophers, scientists, artisans and scholars than has your own beloved country of Greece. And we are of the number who believe that this sturdy stock still obtains, and that so long as this government and this people strive, in all justice, fairness, and decency, to rehabilitate herself, she should be given every opportunity so to do.

"The world is in a most chaotic state, and it behooves every lover of family, flag and country to strive in whatsoever way they properly may, to restore order and national tranquillity. I have found it intensely interesting, as well as timely, to note the salient points, or features, which have from time to time been made from those in authority, and not in authority, in the press and from the

forum, touching what must be done before readjustment can come socially, financially, and industrially to the world. How this can be done is the problem. Perhaps, briefly, we may indicate a few fundamental rules as to how it may be solved: In the first place, the nations must immediately put into execution that which is requisite for every right-minded and right-thinking individual—the avoidance of avarice or covetousness; they must be content with what property belongs to them. In the second place, they must in every possible way make for themselves a dependable livelihood, and in so far as possible produce more of every needed commodity than is utilized by themselves. Contentions and strife must be frowned upon, and every laborer and every producer of every needed requisite for life and happiness must not now contend for a definite number of hours of labor and a definite sum per hour, but the thought and the desire must be: How may I make good in the restoration to my family, my neighbor, and my country, all those things requisite or needful to a contented state? Sincerity must displace insincerity; truth must supplant falsehood; intrigue and duplicity must give way to straightforward, manly conduct, shown by both precept and example. Those who have been called as rulers, legislators and judges must execute their tasks with an eye single to justice and the greatest possible good to the greatest possible number, taking into careful account, at the same time, the fundamental requisites for a happy and contented people, as well as an enduring and prosperous nation. Secret treaties, which proved the bane of existence in this World War, must be a thing of the past. It is really startling to note the number of these treaties in existence at the beginning of this war, and their baneful influence.



"I take it that it is safe for nations, as for individuals, to follow the admonition of that wise ecclesiastic who, after thirty years spent in the most painstaking observations made in disputes and wars between individuals and nations, and had then reached the very acme of wise and recorded expressions, said: 'Agree with thine adversary quickly while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judges, and the judges deliver thee to the officer and thou be cast into prison.'

"Ah, but the contender argues, my position is legally and technically right, and justice must be maintained, and I, therefore, must stand or fall by that which I conceive to be right. Those of you who are familiar with the history of the United States will recall how, during the stress of Civil War which obtained from 1861 to 1865 (over the question of state rights, which the blighting practice of human slavery precipitated), how all personalities and sectional differences were swept aside by that wise statesman and prince of patriots, Abraham Lincoln, President of the Republic and Commander-in-Chief of the army and navy, to the end that only those things fundamentally necessary for the salvation of the union of states might be considered.

"A nation who thus only enters war for the preservation of her life or the life of her people, becomes at once (as Shakespeare puts it) 'thrice armed because the quarrel is just.' A most worthy example for the leaders of all nations at this critical period in world affairs to follow. The individual, combination of individuals, or a nation, who adhere always to what may be technically and legally correct, will find themselves in the vast majority of cases in a state of physical, moral and financial atrophy.

“Let me say here in passing, that there would seem to be no little effort now being made both at home and abroad, to draw the United States into the vortex of European troubles, but such will not be done except by our sincerest endeavors in counsel and moral suasion, so long as the Ship of State is guided by that steady, serene and superlatively capable political mariner and statesman, Hon. Warren G. Harding, supported as he is by that wise, prudent, just and courageous Prime Minister, Charles E. Hughes, sustained as they were two years ago by a majority of seven million intelligent American citizens, unless again should arise such an imperative need or demand, unsolvable by every decent human endeavor of diplomacy to solve, as obtained at the time of our entrance into the last world conflict.

“Those who are of the opinion that American citizenship has faced about on this proposition are reasoning, without knowing the real sentiments of the rank and file of America’s intelligent citizenship. The American people propose to proceed along the line of belief and practice that they are ‘their brother’s keeper’ and not their brother’s slayer and destroyer of home, family, and nations. This we have done, and shall continue to do, by giving every moral support, as well as what we conceive to be proper financial aid, to those nations and to those peoples who have demonstrated to us that they are worthy of confidence and support. The peoples of the various nations are surfeited with the slaughter incident to war, and are demanding peace, and woe unto that nation or power or people who unjustly precipitates another conflict. For be it distinctly understood, such a nation or people will find itself out of accord with every other power entitled to national confidence and national respect.

"While every true American deeply sympathizes with you in this hour of distress, and as you have been so careful this afternoon to note that it is not a perfunctory sympathy of our American people, but one accompanied by heartfelt sympathy, as well as supplies required for the physical salvation of men, women and children, it may not be amiss to call attention to the fact that America is only able to render this service, not alone to you, but to the entire world, to a greater or less degree, by the fact that she has steadfastly maintained those fundamental principles of which I have made mention, which are requisite to a nation who would live not alone for herself, but for the good of all.

"My counsel for your people, as with all people suffering as a result of this cruel, needless war, is to have an abiding faith in a just God who rules over the destinies of nations, and strive constantly, as free moral agents, in whatsoever way possible by human effort, to live active, stalwart, peaceful, self-respecting, law-abiding, liberty-loving subjects and citizens."

## CHAPTER VIII

### EGYPT A VASSAL OF MACEDONIA—PASSING OF CLEOPATRA AND MARK ANTONY—BIRTH OF JESUS.

AFTER the death of Alexander in 323 B. C., Egypt continued a vassal of Macedonia for about thirty-eight years under Philippos Arrhidaeus and Alexander II., son of Alexander the Great, until the death of the latter in 311, when Ptolemy, who had up to this time been acting under these two autocratic superiors as a despotic subordinate official, assumed the title of King in 305 B.C. This family of Ptolemies continued to reign from the date last indicated until 30 B. C., when the most famous of the various Cleopatras saw the end, not alone of her own life and reign, but with her, at the same time, closed the life of Mark Antony, whose infamous relations and conduct with her had so outraged Octavius (Caesar Augustus, Emperor of Rome), who was now, since the murder of Julius Caesar, the Roman ruler as well as the brother of Octavia, the deserted wife of Antony, that he pursued him and, in the famous battle of Actium, defeated him. This led, since both of these rulers, Cleopatra and Antony, committed suicide, to the easy capture of their capital, Alexandria. I shall, in another chapter, have something to say of Cleopatra and her abode in Alexandria.

Egypt was not ruled by Roman Emperors as a province of Rome, but by viceroys or prefects, appointed or nominated by the Emperor. This Roman period or reign con-

tinued from 30 B. C. to 395 A. D., when the Byzantine period began.

Before leaving the Roman period, I wish to direct attention to the fact that this was near the beginning of the Christian Era. Jesus was born towards the close of Augustus Caesar's reign and was about fourteen years of age at the time of the death of this monarch. Augustus Tiberius became the successor of Augustus Caesar and ruled Egypt, as I have heretofore indicated, through viceroys and governors, for twenty-three years. During this period Egypt was in the heyday of her prosperity. Tiberius was careful in the selection of his governors, one of whom he retained for sixteen years, or until the governor's death. Right here I find an interesting bit of history which is worth alluding to. It will be recalled that Seneca, the philosopher, was one of three sons of a rather distinguished father and a retiring but noble mother. He was born 4 B. C. at Cordova, Spain, then a province of Rome. It is believed that his family was originally Roman. At any rate, his relatives in Rome had great influence, and at an early age the three boys, Gallio, Mela and Lucius Annaeus (our subject) were brought to Rome to enter the university.

Lucius, the youngest, was brought under the special care of his aunt, a woman of rare culture and great virtue, whose husband was appointed Governor of Egypt about the time the young Lucius had finished his college work, and he in turn was appointed by his uncle as his secretary. He spent much time in Egypt and was enabled to come into contact with the most learned men who frequented the great capital of Alexandria. He saw much of the early Christian persecutions in Alexandria, and it is believed that he here met St. Paul before coming into official con-

tact with him later in life as the Prime Minister of Nero, in 58 A. D., and for a few years afterwards, until his death at the hands of his onetime student and now sovereign. Gallio, his elder brother, it will be recalled, was the Governor of Achaia, and it was before him that St. Paul was brought on the charge of preaching a doctrine contrary to the accepted belief of the Jewish church.

After the charge was read to the Court and the prosecution had made a short presentation of the case, St. Paul was about to open in his own defense when Gallio stopped the proceedings by stating that there was no charge against the prisoner worthy of the least of his consideration, and dismissed the case, permitting Paul to continue his work. See Acts 18:12-16.

I refer to this Seneca family to show, particularly, the probable influence upon the life and future conduct of Lucius Annaeus Seneca as the result of his having lived in the Egyptian metropolis. I am prepared to believe that, aside from Socrates, he was the greatest philosopher of the ages; certainly the ablest one since the beginning of the Christian Era. It was here, doubtless, he not alone heard the great Apostle Paul expound the new religion, but St. Mark as well. It was in Alexandria that St. Mark died, and his remains were only removed to Venice in 829 A. D.

It was during this Roman period that Marcus Aurelius visited Egypt and the country was beset by wars upon the part of the Egyptians who desired independence from the Romans.

Constantine the Great ruled for thirteen years during this period, from 324 to 337, and the last of the rulers with the empire undivided was Theodosius I. the Great.

Now comes the Byzantine period with a short reign of seven years by Chosroes II., of Persia.

In 622 A. D. the influence of Mohammed, then fifty-two years of age, was begun to be felt. This faith, expounded by him, increased with great rapidity. He died in 632 and his mantle fell upon his father-in-law, Abu Bekr, who became the first Caliph and was succeeded in this high place within two years of his election by Omar, who in turn was succeeded by Osman, whom Ali succeeded, being a cousin as well as the son-in-law of Mohammed.

By 638 the followers of this prophet, Mohammed, controlled Egypt, Syria, and Palestine. Through civil strife between this new Caliph and omayyades, the former lost his power and the latter set up his kingdom with his capital in Damascus, while Egypt was again ruled by governors appointed from Damascus to Bagdad until in 965 A. D. Kafur got possession of Egypt as an independent ruler and ruled with his grandson three years, when the Fatimites (those who attribute their origin to Fatima, the daughter of Mohammed) came into power.

In 973 the Fatimite Mu'izz came to the throne to rule but two years and to be succeeded by his son El Aziz, who ruled with much wisdom for twenty-one years. These Fatimite rulers came to an end in 1171, when Saladin was called to reign, and with changes from time to time, down to 1250, we reach the dynasty of the Bahrite Mamelukes, who held sway for a period of one hundred and thirty-two years. These rulers were originally slaves, trained in military pursuits, and used, for the most part, as personal body-guard of the Sultan or ruler. This dynasty was only to be succeeded by another but different race of Mamelukes known as Circassians, who continued to rule until about 1517, when Sultan Selim I., of Constantinople, came into power. From this date, except for a short period in which the Mamelukes practically ruled, Egypt

became a vassal of Turkey, and Selim I. thus became the spiritual and temporal sovereign of the Church with but few dissenters from his rule or recognition until the coming of Napoleon in 1798.





## CHAPTER IX

### NAPOLEON IN EGYPT

THE history of Napoleon in Egypt is so well known as to require but little reference. Those people visiting Egypt should, however, not fail to visit the Bay of Abukir and the Citadel. Also the scene of the battle between the Turks and the French in which Napoleon, commanding his victorious forces, drove back the Turks into the sea. Napoleon, seeing his doom against the combined influence of the Turks and the English, left Egypt, but permitted General Kleber with his army to remain here, where Kleber was assassinated, June 14, 1800. Not long after his assassination the French left the shores of Egypt.

Abukir is accessible from Alexandria by railroad, and likewise by automobile, being about forty-five minutes' ride over a splendidly macadamized road. It is a place of great historic interest. Here, it will be recalled, famous contests were fought, first between the English and the French, and soon thereafter between the French and the Turks. As to the former, the engagement was wholly naval, the leader being the redoubtable Lord Nelson on the part of the English, and Admiral Brueys representing the French. The French had preceded the English into these waters by about one month, having arrived July 1, 1798. The French Admiral, Brueys, brought his fleet into the Bay of Abukir for safety and anchored it in a long line, about two miles from the coast, and awaited the coming of Lord Nelson, realizing that at once a battle for su-

premacv would ensue. Nelson arrived on August 1 and the battle lines were drawn. Nelson divided his fleet and fought from either side of the French. The engagement began at 6:00 p. m. and lasted throughout the night and until noon of the second day, with the exception of a brief pause which took place within an hour after the battle commenced. This was caused by the conflagration and blowing up of the "Orient", the flagship of Brueys. Just two hours before this tragedy happened, on the same ship, the French Admiral was killed. The fighting forces of the two men were about equal, and perhaps both fought with like ability. The English took greater chances in placing their ships, but in doing so secured points of vantage over the enemy, with the risk, however, of losing some of their warships on the rocky coast. One battleship, the "Cullogen", was lost by being stranded just off Nelson Island. A part of the ship may be seen today two miles distant from the coast.

It will be of interest to those who remember the famous poem of Mrs. Hemans, so familiar to all school boys of my boyhood days, to recall that this "Casibianca", the hero and captain of the flagship "Orient", is the man referred to by her as the "boy who stood on the burning deck whence all but him had fled." Lord Nelson, when all was over, realized that he had been engaged in the fight of his life. In his despatch home, he stated that the battle had taken place but a short distance from Rosetta, near the mouth of the Nile, hence it was denominated "Battle of the Nile" instead of what would have been the more accurate title: "Naval Battle of Abukir."

The loss of the French fleet was to Napoleon his undoing in Egypt and the Near East. He was strong on land, having already fought and won the "Battle of the Pyra-

mids" near Cairo, and he was called upon soon to fight the second battle, this time with the Turks, for, at the instigation of England, Turkey had declared war on France, and now at Abukir, and after the defeat of his navy there he was present to direct the forces, aided by his intrepid generals, Murat and Kleber. The Turks had already landed fifteen thousand men, and this land force was supported by the Turkish fleet at various points of vantage. Napoleon, being informed of this news, hurried down from Cairo, arriving July 25, 1799, with ten thousand men, mostly cavalry, and won a decisive victory at great odds, driving five thousand four hundred Turks into the sea to drown. I have gone over this ground recently, and standing on these various points of vantage, in my imagination, saw this and the naval battle. Historic land, this!

It is of interest to state that in and about the Bay of Abukir are to be found the professional fisherman of Egypt. Magnificent fish of many varieties are to be found here in great abundance. Indeed, from this mart comes the supply for almost the whole of Egypt, except the smaller supply taken from Lake Karun in the Province of Fayum.

But a few miles east from Abukir are located the remains of the once famous city of Rosetta, which will at least live in the memory of man by reason of the fact that it was here the "Rosetta Stone" (now to be seen, not in the Egyptian, but the British Museum) was found. This was a most important discovery, for upon it were written three scripts—Hieroglyphic, Demotic and Greek—which led to the deciphering of the ancient Egyptian language. Had nature provided the material around and about Rosetta, that she so well supplied to Alexandria and even Abukir, Rosetta would now be the port of entry into Egypt in-

stead of Alexandria. But the coast in this part of Egypt, at the mouth of the Nile, is mere delta, while Alexandria is abundantly supplied with limestone ridges which, with the ingenuity of man, has made possible the development of one of the finest harbors of the world. To the father of the present Mohammed Ali dynasty really belongs the credit of modernizing the harbor of Alexandria, after a lapse of two thousand years. Very soon after his coming into power, in 1830, as the ruler of Egypt, under a grant from the Turkish government, he commenced the building of the Mahmoudieh Canal which connected Alexandria harbor with the Nile River, thus affording a continuous waterway from Cairo to Alexandria, enabling the bringing of the products of the soil from Upper and Lower Egypt directly to the port of Alexandria. At this time Rosetta had about thirty-five thousand people, while Alexandria had about five thousand. Today Rosetta has perhaps twelve thousand, while Alexandria has more than a half million population.

I have spent some time endeavoring to locate the site of the Palace of the Ptolemies, of whom Cleopatra V. was the last independent ruler, until the king now upon the throne was crowned on October 9, 1922. I have come to the conclusion that her palace was located near Chatby, where now stands the Egyptian Government Hospital. Here is where Julius Caesar came to her rescue in August, 48 B. C. After a battle, both by land and sea, lasting, for different periods, from August until the following January, he overcame her brother, who was likewise her husband, Ptolemy XIV., who, although but ten years of age, was kept at the head of the Egyptian army notwithstanding his immature years. The Egyptians were defeated at the "Battle of the Nile", and Ptolemy, the boy husband and

brother of Cleopatra, was killed. Caesar returned to the palace triumphant. Cleopatra returned from her banishment to the palace wrapped, it is alleged, in an oriental carpet and carried upon the shoulder of a slave. She was unwelcome by her only remaining brother, Ptolemy XV., eight years of age, and her sister, Arsinoe, who was but fifteen years old. But she quickly gained the favor and protection of Caesar. After marrying her brother, Ptolemy XV., at his tender age, she had both him and her sister poisoned. This left her free to follow her own course, supported, as she was, by Caesar, who lived with her for a period of three years. In the meantime she bore him a son. Soon after the birth of this child Caesar returned to Rome, Cleopatra following in March, 44 B. C. Then Caesar was murdered and Cleopatra returned to her capitol and, Caesar gone, she took up with Mark Antony. He, in spite of the fact that he was married to the beautiful Octavia, sister of the successor in power at Rome, continued to live in Egypt with this courtesan queen from 48 to 30 B. C., when they both died by committing suicide, Antony by his own sword, and Cleopatra by means of some subtle poison, passing into the Great Beyond on the same day.



## CHAPTER X

### MOHAMMED ALI, FOUNDER OF PRESENT DYNASTY—DESTRUCTION OF MAMELUKES RELIGIOUS TOLERATION IN EGYPT

THE present dynasty came into being with Mohammed Ali, a young Macedonian military officer, thirty-four years of age, as the leading figure. Left an orphan in early childhood, he was taken into the house of the Governor of the town in which he was born, Kavala, Macedonia, Greece. Not long after his marriage to the daughter of the Governor he was sent to Egypt with a military force from Kavala to fight the French. He was later made a colonel by the Turkish-Egyptian government, and with his Military Corps played a role which brought destruction both to the Turks and the Mamelukes. I should say that his action in thus playing the one against the other, while he at the same time played the middle, required military tact and strategy of a superlative type. It will be recalled that the Turkish local government was finally defeated and expelled and Mohammed Ali, with the approval of the Turkish government, became Pasha, and was likewise appointed governor. He now allied himself with the Mamelukes against the British and was successful in defeating them and causing their withdrawal from Egypt in 1807. He then turned his attention to his treacherous allies. After the battle with the English, this now famous general and ruler of men gave it out that he was giving a feast at his palace in Cairo, sit-



uated on the Citadel, where now stands the famous Mosque bearing his name, to which he proposed to invite his allies in many battles, the Mamelukes. Invitations were, in due course, sent to the remaining four hundred and eighty Mamelukes and at a given signal, as his "guests" were entering the gates to the Palace, his corps of Albanian soldiers attacked the Mamelukes while they were in a narrow and tortuous lane surrounded by towering walls two hundred and fifty feet high, and all save one of this number were slain. This massacre took place March 1, 1808.

The extermination of the Mamelukes by Mohammed Ali, on the date mentioned, is graphically told by a competent and reliable writer who was in Cairo at the time this ruthless cruelty was meted out to these formidable cavaliers, and the account is recorded in Walpole's Travels, page 32, and is as follows:

"Nothing can be imagined more dreadful than the scene of the murder. The Mamelukes had left the Divan, and were arrived at one of the narrow passages in their way to the gates of the Citadel, when a fire from two thousand Albanians was poured in on them from the tops of the walls, and in all directions. Unprepared for anything of the sort, and embarrassed for want of room, they were capable of scarcely any resistance; a few almost harmless blows were all they attempted, and those who were not killed by the fire were dragged from their horses, stripped naked, and with a handkerchief around their heads and another around their waists, they were led before the Pasha and his sons, and by them ordered to immediate execution. Even then the execution was aggravated, and instead of being instantly beheaded, many were not at first wounded mortally. They were shot in different parts

of their bodies with pistols or stuck with daggers. Many struggled to break loose from those who held them; some succeeded and were killed in corners of the Citadel or on top of the Pasha's harem. Others, boys of from twelve to fourteen years, cried eagerly for mercy, protesting with obvious truth that they were innocent of any conspiracy, and offering themselves as slaves. All these and, in short, everyone, however young and incapable of guilt, or however old and tried in his fidelity, the more elevated and the more obscure, were hurried before the Pasha, who sternly refused them mercy, one by one, impatient until he was assured the destruction was complete. Here, then, is the end of the Mamelukes, and this is the Pasha who figures himself upon his clemency."

While this must be regarded as a rather heartless slaughter, yet we must, or should bear in mind, that he was dealing with a band of outlaws, who were willing to serve in any capacity, and in all circumstances which would redound, for the time, to financial profit or ill-gotten gain to them. It could not, therefore, be regarded as a slaughter of innocents. If, after reading this account, we are led to believe that we who belong to the Christian nations have made such progress in civilization that no such an unmerciful act would be contemplated today, it would be well to let our minds revert to the atrocities of the late war, and in doing so, I think we shall be pained in the thought that we, perhaps, have not made that progress in human sympathy, charity, and mercy, which we are inclined to appropriate or credit to Christian civilization.

This astute ruler extended his influence and territory and did great things for Egypt in the way of building canals, laying out and building cities and towns, and in

every way planning for a prosperous and enduring government. January, 1848, by reason of advanced age and infirmities, he abdicated when about sixty-nine years of age, in favor of his able and successful military son, Ibrahim, who, like his father, was a military man of marked ability, but he survived but a few months after being inducted into office, and his father followed him to the grave in 1849.

Abbas I., a son of Tusam and a grandson of Mohammed Ali, now ascended the throne. Fortunately for the people, his reign was short for it was especially noted for its inhumanity to man. The law of compensation was meted out to him in 1854 by strangulation.

Abbas was succeeded by a son of Mohammed Ali, Saiad, who had what is regarded as one of the most successful reigns since the establishment of the dynasty by his father in 1805. He was just in all matters concerning his own people, as well as with foreigners, as I shall further along point out. He saw to it that taxation was equable and fair; abolished all forms of oppression; markedly aided in the establishment of the Cairo museum; constructed railways and telegraphs and gave great material aid to his friend of former years, M. de Lesseps, in carrying forward the scheme for the construction of the Suez Canal. While this most important undertaking was not completed until six years after his death, or until 1869, the support already afforded the enterprise assured, in a very large measure, its success. And it may be stated that what was needful in the way of encouragement and financial assistance to complete the work was supplied by his nephew and successor, Ismail Pasha. Before passing on, however, to the consideration of Ismail Pasha and his reign, I wish to relate, apropos of my reference above as

to Saiad Pasha's treatment of foreigners, an incident which happened during his reign, by giving the correspondence relating thereto in which both this ruler and the President of the United States, Abraham Lincoln, took active parts. We believe the publication of the correspondence which took place upon this occasion will prove not alone of interest, but will serve in a helpful way to show that as long as sixty-five years ago there existed a liberal, charitable tendency or spirit upon the part of the enlightened Mohammedans toward the Christian missionaries then in Egypt.

It is of interest, in this connection, to state that the "Osiout," referred to in the correspondence under reference, is the Assiout of today, a city of seventy-five thousand inhabitants, where is located the splendid American College, established there about the time of the regrettable affair recorded below. I have appended the full texts of all the correspondence in this case, except the letter of Faris-el-Hakim, the agent of the American missionaries in Egypt and the plaintiff as well. This letter is omitted, for the reason that it is largely a rehearsal of the facts as outlined in the letter of Mr. Thayer, the Consul-General to the Secretary of State, William H. Seward, and is therefore superfluous to the matter germane.

## RELIGIOUS TOLERATION IN EGYPT

---

### OFFICIAL CORRESPONDENCE

#### RELATING TO

#### THE INDEMNITY OBTAINED FOR THE MALTREATMENT

#### of

#### FARIS-EL-HAKIM,

*an Agent of the American Missionaries in Egypt.*

REPRINTED FROM PUBLISHED OFFICIAL DOCUMENTS.

## Contents:

1. Introductory Note.
2. Message from the President of the United States.
3. Mr. Thayer to Mr. Seward.
4. Mr. Seward to Mr. Thayer.
5. The President to the Viceroy.
6. The Viceroy to the President.
7. Appendix.

A—The Viceroy's Reply.

London: 1862

RELIGIOUS TOLERATION IN EGYPT

37th Congress) 2nd Session)	HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES MESSAGE <i>from the</i> PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.	(Ex. Dec. (No. 117
--------------------------------	---	-----------------------

To the House of Representatives:

In compliance with the resolution of the House of Representatives of the 20th instant, requesting information in regard to the indemnity obtained by the consul-general of the United States at Alexandria, Egypt, for the maltreatment of Faris-el-Hakim, an agent in the employ of the American missionaries in that country, I transmit a report from the Secretary of State, and the documents by which it was accompanied.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

Washington, May 22, 1862.

Department of State,  
Washington, May 21, 1862.

The Secretary of State, to whom was referred the resolution of the House of Representatives of the 20th in-

stant, requesting the President "to communicate to the House of Representatives, if not incompatible with the public interest, copies of correspondence and papers on the files of the Department of State, relating to the indemnity obtained by the consul-general of the United States at Alexandria, Egypt, for the maltreatment of Faris-el-Hakim, an agent in the employ of the American missionaries in Egypt," has the honor to lay before the President the papers called for by the resolution.

Respectfully submitted,

WILLIAM H. SEWARD.

The President

---

No. 5)

Mr. Thayer to Mr. Seward, United States Consulate General.

Alexandria, August 26, 1861.

Sir:

An affair of considerable importance, affecting the question of religious toleration in Egypt, has just been satisfactorily settled by the agency of this Consulate.

On the night of Saturday, the 29th of July, I received a telegraphic despatch, dated the 25th of that month, from our consular agent at Osiout, the capital of Upper Egypt, stating that on that morning Faris, an agent of the American missionaries, Messrs. Lansing and Barnet, had been severely bastinadoed and otherwise mistreated at the court of the Cadi of Osiout, and had then, by the order of the Cadi, been imprisoned.

On the Monday following, I wrote to Zoulficar Pasha, the minister of Foreign Affairs in Egypt, demanding the immediate release of the imprisoned man and an investigation of his case, and also announcing I should expect

appropriate satisfaction for the barbarous outrage committed by the order of the Cadi on Faris. His Excellency, on the afternoon of the same day, replied that he had just telegraphed for full information as to the facts of the Moudir (governor) of Osiout, and would communicate it to me at once. Two days later His Excellency accordingly informed me that the Moudir had reported, by telegraph, that neither he nor the United States consular agent at Osiout had the least knowledge that Faris was an American protege, but that he would nevertheless order an inquiry into the facts.

In regard to Faris, it is proper to remark here that I learned from the missionaries that he was a Syrian physician of considerable learning and accomplishments, whom they employed at Osiout for the sale and distribution of Bibles and publications. He was not technically an American protege, not having been provided with the necessary certificate from this consulate-general, though in Syria he had enjoyed that privilege by the favor of the proper authorities there. Nevertheless, he had been presented in person to the Moudir of Osiout, and commended to his protection as the agent of the American missionaries by Mr. Lansing, some three months before the outrage on him. The cause and circumstances of this affair were briefly these:

A Christian woman of Osiout, who had been compelled to profess Mohammedism, wished to return to her original faith. In the absence of the Coptic bishop, she employed Faris (whose argumentative no less than his medical skill gives him the title of El Taheeb or El Hakim, the Arabic for "doctor") to be her attorney in complying with the usual formalities required to enable her to enjoy in peace her new religion. Faris, without consulting his employers,

assumed her cause and agreed to appear in her behalf before the Cadi. His conduct in this matter, however, as well as that of the woman, was strictly conformable to the laws of Egypt, and to the well-known firman of the late Sultan, which guarantees religious toleration in the dominions and dependencies of the Porte. But in a place so remote from the sovereign authority as Osiout, and with a population of at least twenty thousand, for the most part bigoted Mussulmans, the practical enforcement of such liberality is exceedingly difficult, and even dangerous.

Faris, being summoned to appear in the court of the Cadi as the woman's attorney, found it filled with the prominent Muslim citizens of Osiout, who, with the attendant rabble, numbering about sixty, and subsequently increased to two hundred, were evidently disposed to raise a tumult. They had lately heard of the accession of the new Sultan, who was generally believed to be an unrelenting enemy of religious freedom, and under whose reign they expected unlimited license to exterminate the odious heresy of Christianity. Without being allowed to explain his case, and in evident agreement with the prearranged plan of the Cadi, Faris was insultingly told to sit upon the ground, and was then bastinadoed and tortured in the most inhuman manner until he swooned away from his sufferings. After being reviled, beaten with staves, shoes, courbashes (raw hides), and being spat upon, kicked and frightfully maimed, he was dragged by a clamorous mob, urged by the cadi and Mufti, to the criminal cell of the prison, and only released that evening when the jailor reported him to be dying. On reviving the next day he was again imprisoned, but was liberated by the order of the Moudir, who held an investigation and strongly con-



demned the irregular and brutal proceedings of the Cadi and the populace. The doctor who examined Faris reported his wounds to be of a very serious character, and it seems probable that his health is permanently impaired. The tumult thus created in Osiout, by popular violence, was so great that the few European residents there considered their lives in danger, and feared that the massacres of Jeddah and Damascus were to be renewed. They therefore petitioned for protection to the Moudir, who issued a proclamation commanding the inhabitants to return peaceably to their homes, and to desist from further disturbances.

It is to be observed that the barbarous torture of the bastinado has been abolished even in the army and navy of Egypt, by a decree of the Viceroy dated on the ninth of July of the present year. Nevertheless, in the semi-ecclesiastical courts of the Cadi, the rules of which are not determined by civil authority, this cruel abuse flourished in full vigor.

A minute and deeply interesting recital of the proceedings at Osiout, written by Faris to the missionaries, is appended to this dispatch (marked A). I also communicate herewith a translation (marked B) of the Cadi's letter to the Moudir justifying the outrage, and the Moudir's reply thereto (marked C) condemning severely the treatment of Faris. It will be seen that the Cadi admits, and even glories in his misconduct, which he considers to be warranted beyond question by the approval and cooperation of the most distinguished and wealthy Mussulmans of Osiout, and by the precepts of his religion.

On Saturday, the 3rd of August, having received a letter from our consular agent at Osiout, enquiring as to the title of Faris to United States protection, I returned a peremp-

tory order to give him all the official aid his circumstances might require.

On Monday, August 5, 19—, I visited the minister of foreign affairs, in company with Mr. Robert Wilkinson, the United States vice-consul at Cairo, and Mr. Lansing, the American missionary, and one of the employers of Faris.

After laying before His Excellency the facts relating to the outbreak at Osiout, I requested of the government a steamer to convey myself or my agent up the Nile, to insure an impartial investigation preliminary to the punishment of the crime. He replied that he would present my request for a steamer to the Viceroy, and answer at once; but as for the punishment of those who had assaulted Faris he could not say, for it had not appeared that Faris was an American protege, no formal and regular notice to that effect having ever been served by the consul-general on the Egyptian government. In reply, I said it was quite immaterial to my purpose whether Faris was or was not an American protege in the usual sense of the term. Faris was the agent and representative of two American citizens, engaged in a lawful missionary enterprise. An outrage on him was an outrage on them; and I should demand satisfaction as urgently as if they, and not their representative, had been thus maltreated. The case, in my opinion, was one to be settled not by diplomatic technicalities, but on its substantial merits, and on the obvious principles of justice and common sense. His Excellency assured me that it would be settled amicably, and I withdrew, awaiting the result of my request.

On the following morning a verbal message came to me from the Minister of Foreign Affairs, stating that a government steamer would go to Osiout in a few days,

and that I should have notice in time to avail myself of that conveyance.

Finding that this foreign office discussion was not likely to expedite my business, I resolved to make a direct appeal to the Viceroy, who, with the most courteous readiness, granted me an audience for nine o'clock on the morning of the 8th instant. Attended as before, I called at the place of His Highness at the time mentioned. After answering his inquiries respecting our national struggle for the maintenance of the United States government, I changed the subject by adverting to a small insurrection in his own dominions, which I hoped he would treat with the same vigor which we applied to such troubles at home. I then unfolded the case to His Highness, and told him that my government, and millions of people throughout the world, would await his decision with interest; not only the numerous and influential religious associations of Christendom, but the friends of civilization everywhere, would hold this to be a test question as to the progress of just government and religious toleration in Egypt. If His Highness were to conquer Syria, and repeat in his own person the military triumphs of his father, Mehemet Ali, he would not gain such a degree of confidence of foreign nations in the strength and justice of his government as by a satisfactory settlement of this affair. The Viceroy replied that it was difficult at present to enforce the doctrine of toleration in Upper Egypt, and that some allowance should be made for the peculiar opinions and ways of the people there; the government would always exert itself to promote harmonious and just relations between foreigners and the native population, and to do right to people of all religious creeds. He also suggested that there might be some exaggeration in the stories of the

outbreak at Osiout. In response, I remarked that a perusal of the report of his own officer, the Moudir, would probably convince him that there was no exaggeration. I did not rely on the statement of Faris alone, which, however, bore external evidence of its truth; I would be willing to rest my case on the report of the Moudir, which my friend, Mr. Lansing, had brought with him. I would almost consent to take the letter of the Cadi, confessing and justifying the atrocity he had perpetrated. The Viceroy then declared he would give me ample satisfaction, and asked me what I desired. A steamer should be put at my disposal in forty-eight hours, to convey myself or my commissioner of investigation to Osiout. I told His Highness that there was danger in delays; that the opinion of the Moudir concluded all the investigation I desired. I now did not wish for investigation, but for immediate justice and punishment. I would rest the case on the report of the Moudir, made after his examination, and ask His Highness to award penalty on the basis of the facts therein contained. The Viceroy assented, and while I was sitting there he had ordered the Moudir, by telegraph, to do me justice. He also took the letter of Faris and other documents handed him by Mr. Lansing, and promised to consider them.

On the fifteenth instant I sent Mr. Wilkinson to inquire of the Viceroy what had been done, and to specify what measures I would wish him to adopt in case he desired definite information. His Highness said he had deposed the Cadi and his subordinates from their offices. Mr. Wilkinson told him that I required the imprisonment, not only of the Cadi and Mufti, but of all the ringleaders in the outrages mentioned in the Cadi's letter. I would also expect a fine of ten thousand dollars to be exacted from

their property to compensate Faris for the injuries he had sustained. His Highness thought this penalty too severe, but promised to inform me what he would do further in a few days.

On the 21st of August, His Excellency, Nubar Bey, a high functionary of the government, called at the United States consulate and informed me that the Viceroy, after removing and degrading the officers of the Cadi's court, did not wish to punish the other offenders without further investigation. I then said that this mode of proceeding was too dilatory. I wished his Highness to chastise offenders against my government as promptly as he would chastise offenders against his own. There was no need of further investigation. The same facts which warranted, in the opinion of His Highness, the punishment of the Cadi, would justify the punishment of the Cadi's accomplices. I would not be satisfied without the imprisonment of them all, in addition to a heavy fine. His Excellency replied that the Viceroy was extremely desirous to meet my wishes, but feared such severe penalties would only produce fresh animosities amongst the Christians; would not minor penalties serve my purpose better? To this I answered that half-way measures irritated, rather than subdued the disorderly, tempting them to try their strength with the government. For the dispersal of mobs, in my own country at least, the superior efficacy of bullets over blank cartridges had been conclusively tested. I again urged the importance of immediate action, that I might report to my government a satisfactory solution of the matter by the next mail.

On the following morning, Nubar Bey brought to the consulate the message that His Highness had considered my suggestions, and would immediately fine and imprison

the thirteen men. He thought, however, that I expected too much; that two or three thousand dollars was as much as they could pay, and a month a long enough term of confinement. I replied that, in consideration of the prompt and handsome manner in which His Highness had treated my wishes, I would consent to reduce the pecuniary award to five thousand dollars; but, when so small a period as one month was suggested, I feared His Highness did not appreciate the enormity of the crime he proposed to punish. For the culprit who steals my spoons one month might be sufficient; but here was a crime against civilization—a crime which it was in the interest of the Egyptian government, not less than my own government, to rebuke, and the minimum of punishment I could accept was one year. I begged His Excellency to assure the Viceroy that he would never regret having embraced the opportunity I thus gave him of commending his government to the sympathies of the world, and, as I had heard that the Viceroy was intending to sail that day for Constantinople, I trusted he would send me a favorable response before his departure. His Excellency then returned, promising to report the result of his interview.

About three hours later I received a message that the Viceroy had ordered the thirteen men whose names I had mentioned to be imprisoned for one year, and that the fine of five thousand dollars should be exacted from them, each paying according to the degree of his culpability. In order, however, that the payment to Faris might not be delayed, the government would at once pay the money, reimbursing itself afterwards by the collection of the fine.

Accordingly, this morning, just two months since the day of my arrival in Egypt, I had the satisfaction of seeing the messenger of the government deposit a bag con-

taining five thousand dollars in gold in the office of the consulate-general, where it is now held subject to the order of the beneficiary.

In regard to the woman in whose behalf Faris encountered his persecution, I am informed that, having since reasserted before the Moudir her rejection of Moham-medanism, she had been placed by that officer in charge of the Coptic bishop, and is allowed to follow her new faith without molestation. This extraordinary decision of a Muslim governor in Upper Egypt is quite as significant of the advance of religious toleration as was the satisfaction awarded to Faris.

The admirable decision of the Viceroy in this affair is warmly approved by all classes, except, of course, the most bigoted portion of his native subjects. Its effects will be widespread and highly auspicious. Religious intolerance has been, for the first time, efficiently rebuked in its most populous stronghold in Upper Egypt; and a fanatical outbreak which, if unchecked, might have culminated in the bloody tragedies of Jeddah and Damascus, has, by the firm policy of the Viceroy, been suppressed and quelled.

I trust it will not be deemed unbecoming also to remark that the success of this consulate in disposing the Viceroy to his praiseworthy course will, perhaps, be taken as a sign that the efforts of the enemies of our government at home have not, as yet, destroyed its influence abroad.

Before closing this dispatch, I cannot refrain from acknowledging my indebtedness, in the prosecution of the case of Faris, to the efficient cooperation of the American missionaries, Messrs. Lansing, Hogg and Barnet, and also to the experience and active service of Mr. Wilkinson, the United States vice-consul at Cairo.

(Mr. Seward to Mr. Thayer)

Department of State,

Washington, October 9, 1861.

Sir:

Your dispatch of the 26th of August, No. 5, has been received. The account of the prosecution which you instituted against the persons guilty of acts of intolerance and persecution towards Faris, an agent of the American missionaries in Upper Egypt, and its success, is very interesting, and the proceeding itself receives the emphatic approbation of the government.

I send herewith an autographic letter of the President, addressed to his Royal Highness the Pasha, expressing due acknowledgments of the vigor, energy, and enlightened liberality of his conduct in this matter, which cannot fail to excite a deep interest throughout the United States, and even among other Christian nations.

I am, Sir, your obedient servant,

WILLIAM H. SEWARD.

Wm. S. Thayer, Esq.,

Consul-General of the United States,  
Alexandria, Egypt.

---

(The President to the Viceroy)

Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States of America, to His Highness Mohammed Saiad Pasha, Viceroy of Egypt and Its Dependencies.

Great and Good Friend:

I have received from Mr. Thayer, consul-general of the United States at Alexandria, a full account of the liberal, enlightened and energetic proceedings which, on his complaint, you have adopted, in bringing to speedy and condign punishment the parties, subjects of Your Highness in



Upper Egypt, who were concerned in an act of cruel persecution against Faris, an agent of certain Christian missionaries in Upper Egypt.

I pray Your Highness to be assured that these proceedings, at once so prompt and so just, will be regarded as a new and unmistakable proof equally of Your Highness' friendship for the United States, and of the firmness, integrity and wisdom with which the government of Your Highness is conducted.

Wishing you great prosperity and success, I am,

Your good friend,

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

Washington, October 9, 1861.

William H. Seward, Secretary of State.

---

(The Viceroy to the President)

To the Honorable Abraham Lincoln,

President of the United States of America.

Honorable Sir and Friend:

Mr. Thayer, consul-general of the United States at Alexandria, has presented me the letter you were pleased to write me, expressing your feelings of satisfaction for the punishment which I have inflicted on some individuals guilty of evil and cruel treatment towards an agent of certain Christian missionaries in Upper Egypt. Mr. Thayer, who, I am happy to say, entertains with me the most friendly relations, has already expressed to me the feeling of your government.

In this case, honorable friend, I have only executed the rule which I have always endeavored to follow, in protecting in an equal way, and without consideration of creed, all those who, either by inclination or for the fulfillment

of a duty, sojourn in the country submitted to my administration.

I am profoundly sensible of the friendly manner in which you express your sentiments both to myself and to my government, and I pray you, honorable sir and friend, to accept with this offering of my thanks, perpetuity and integrity of the American Union, which I hope, under your able presidency, will soon see an end of the trials with which the Almighty has been pleased to afflict it.

Your most devoted friend,

MOHAMMED SAHAD. .

Alexandria, November 21, 1861.

(This letter is taken from the "Spettatore Egiziano", official paper, published in Alexandria.)



## CHAPTER XI

### PRINCE OMAR TOUSSOUN

I HAVE referred in the previous chapter to the high character and statesman-like ability of His Highness Saïad Pasha, ex-Khedive of Egypt, and I feel that I should be derelict if I should fail to record the fact that he had left two grandsons who are worthy of so great a grandsire. I refer to Prince Omar and Gemel Toussoun. The former I know well. He is a scholar, a patriot, a philanthropist, a loyal, devoted husband, and an indulgent, painstaking father, whose children honor and respect his advice and counsel.

He is not alone admired for his splendid accomplishments of head and heart by his family and his countrymen, but by the foreign populace as well.

Prince Omar is a consistent and ardent believer in the independence of his own country, and is thoroughly imbued with the belief (which is a fact) that the British have imposed upon his people to a superlative degree. Recently, in a public statement, he referred to the ultimatum issued by the British, after the assassination of Sir Lee Stack, when they charged the Egyptian government, if not directly, at least indirectly, as being guilty of this foul crime, and upon this hypothesis demanded the surrender of the Sudan, the payment in cash within twenty-four hours of two million five hundred thousand dollars, and declared that it was their intention to break their contract entered into with the Egyptian government whereby

three hundred thousand feddans or acres were to be watered from the Blue and White Nile, in the Gezira district in the Sudan, and instead, an unlimited amount would be used, thereby threatening the very existence of the fourteen million people of Egypt by robbing them of the Nile water.

His Highness very aptly, when discussing this outrageous imposition upon his people, alluded to the assassination of President McKinley by a foreigner, and asks if the American government had even thought of asking an indemnity from the Italian government. But the interview with Prince Omar Toussoun is so interesting and worth while that we herewith reproduce the chief passages as given to a representative of the "Al Mokattom", an Alexandria newspaper, dealing, as it does, with the policy of good understanding between Egypt and England:

Asked to give his opinion regarding Egypt's alliance with Great Britain, and if it were in the interest of Egypt, His Highness Prince Omar made the following statement:

"Alliance is undoubtedly advantageous if concluded between two parties who are equally strong, or if there is little difference in strength between the two parties concerned; for in that case, each of them feels some fear, and that makes both respect their pledges to each other. But if there is a great difference in their positions it is always the strong, as we are taught by history and experience, who profit by agreement."

His Highness went on to say: "Should the strong respect his pledges to the weak this would be only temporary, and in cases where such an attitude conforms with the interests of the former, but if, in the course of time, his interests clashed with his pledges, the stronger party would not hesitate to overlook those pledges; out of cour-

tesy he might pretend that he respected the pledge, but he would interpret the same according to circumstances, always having in view his personal interests, and caring very little for the protests of the weak, so long as it has strength to force the acceptance of what is dictated.

"We are sorry to say that in the present case we are the weak party. Is it advisable, therefore, for us to endeavor to have an alliance with Great Britain? Are preceding events encouraging? Great Britain has not respected the numerous promises she has given us; she did not respect her pledges in the past; what guarantees will make her fulfill her promises in the future?

"We wonder if it is right to call the contract proposed to be made between England and ourselves an 'agreement' or 'alliance'? (His Highness here refers to the recent treaty entered into between Sir Austin Chamberlain and Sarwat Pasha, which was rejected by the British Parliament and which caused the crisis of July, 1928, to which reference is made in the appendix.) Is it not more correct to call it a contract according to which Egypt yields England a part of her rights, acknowledging the legitimacy of the British occupation of Egyptian territory? What benefit will Egypt reap from this new sacrifice, and what value will England pay us for having these privileges, and can freedom be valued? I address this question to the British nation, for I believe that it estimates the value of freedom more than other nation.

"England has given us proofs of the value of agreements with her in her treatment in connection with the Sudan agreement; she has ousted us from those regions because some of our young, rash, hot-headed men killed the regretted Governor of the Sudan. The outrage was very ugly, and Egypt denounced from end to end her

extreme disgust with those denounced persons and violators of Egyptian patriotism; but we cannot see that an atrocious crime has anything to do with political agreements and international relations. Similar crimes were perpetrated by the subjects of States far superior to us, and with a more solid civilization, committing outrages on the lives of men belonging to other States of a higher position than that of the late Sirdar, and yet we have not seen such results as those of the unfortunate outrage on the Governor of the Sudan.

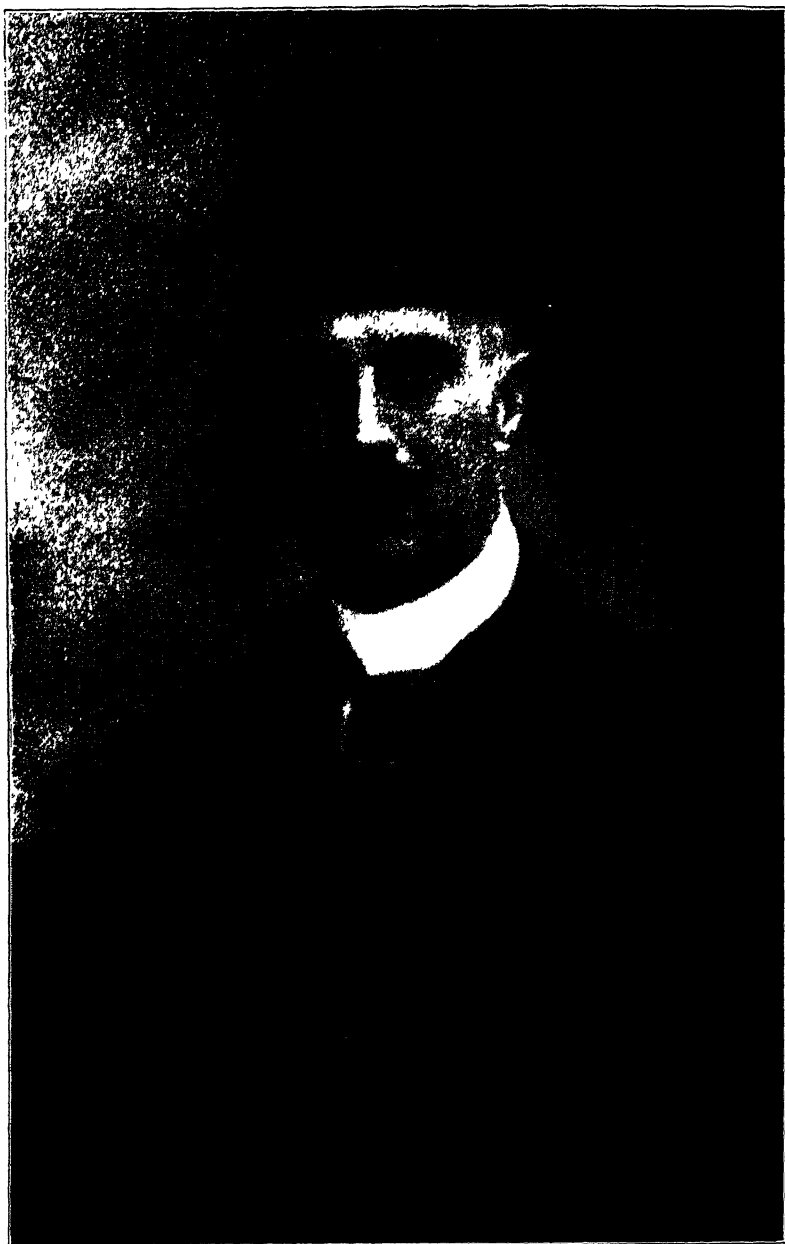
"The following is a list of some of those outrages: 1. Empress Elizabeth of Austria was murdered by an Italian. 2. M. Carnot, President of the French Republic, was assassinated by an Italian. 3. Mr. McKinley, President of the United States, was murdered also by an Italian.

"The victims were all greater than the late Sirdar, but none of the Powers whose heads were murdered took any steps against Italy. It is true that the murder of the Crown Prince of Austria-Hungary and his wife was followed by the great war, but this was only a superficial reason, as the Allies proved that Germany wanted to fight. . . ."

With regard to the "policy" of good understanding, the Prince made the following remarks: "Nobody dislikes good understanding, and we, the weaker party, welcome it more than those who are strong like England; but it must be free from ambitious and special ends if it is desired to be useful on both sides. We have already seen that 'good understanding' only prevails between England and ourselves when we admit all that she demands. If we receive her ambitions with a tendency to cling to our rights, that 'good understanding' at once becomes the reverse. The 'good understanding' prevailed between our







PRINCE OMAR TOUSSOUN

government and England in the time of the Ziwar ministry, which agreed to expel Egyptian teachers from the Sudan for no other reason than that they were Egyptians, and suppressed the mentioning of the King of Egypt in sermons in the Sudan Mosques, which is an insult to our dignity.

"The real fact is that our position with regard to England is like that of a creditor with regard to his debtor; if the debtor is willing to pay off his debt in full he can pay it without a new agreement with him, unless the debtor wants to pay only a part of the debt and get a document freeing him from the rest of it."

The above interview states the case, we think, clearly. If the British government were disposed to do the just and righteous thing with these people it could be, in deed and in truth, a veritable benediction to them. As to how this might be done, a concrete example is to be found in the treatment of the Cuban people by the government of the United States of America after the war between the United States and Spain. We let the Cuban people fully understand that our entering the war was for humanitarian reasons only, and that so soon as the war was over the President was authorized by Congress (April 20, 1898) to "leave the government and control of the island of Cuba to its people," subject only to the following articles of agreement:

### THE PLATT AMENDMENT

#### I.

"That the government of Cuba shall never enter into any treaty or other compact with any foreign power or powers which will impair or tend to impair the independence of Cuba, nor in any manner authorize or permit any

foreign power or powers to obtain, by colonization or for military or naval purposes or otherwise, lodgment in or control over any portion of said island.

2.

"That the government shall not assume or contract any public debt to pay the interest upon which, and to make reasonable sinking fund provision for the ultimate discharge of which, the ordinary revenues of the island, after defraying the current expenses of government, shall be inadequate.

3.

"That the government of Cuba consents that the United States may exercise the right to intervene for the preservation of Cuban independence, the maintenance of a government adequate for the protection of life, property, and individual liberty, and for discharging the obligations with respect to Cuba imposed by the treaty of Paris on the United States, and to be assumed and undertaken by the government of Cuba.

4.

"That all acts of the United States in Cuba during its military occupancy thereof are ratified and validated, and all lawful rights acquired thereunder shall be maintained and protected.

5.

"That the government of Cuba will execute, and as far as necessary extend, the plans already devised, or other plans to be mutually agreed upon, for the sanitation of the cities of the island, to the end that a recurrence of epidemic and infectious diseases may be prevented, thereby assuring protection to the people and commerce

of Cuba, as well as to the commerce of the southern ports of the United States and the people residing therein.

## 6.

"That the Isle of Pines shall be omitted from the proposed constitutional boundaries of Cuba, the title thereto being left to future adjustment by treaty.\*

## 7.

"That to enable the United States to maintain the independence of Cuba, and to protect the people thereof, as well as for its own defense, the Government of Cuba will sell or lease to the United States lands necessary for coal-ing or naval stations at certain specified points, to be agreed upon with the President of the United States.

## 8.

"That by way of further assurance the Government of Cuba will embody the foregoing provisions in a permanent treaty with the United States."

So soon as the people of Cuba had framed a constitution embracing the foregoing provisions or requirements, and had elected a president, the fulfillment of the pledge of the government of the United States was at once complied with, when provisions were made for the establishment of international relations with the government of Cuba.

More than a quarter of a century has elapsed since these provisions were entered into between the United States and the island of Cuba, and I am quite prepared to believe that they have been in every way so satisfactory that no change whatsoever is desired by either government. The Cuban people have thus been made both

---

\*The Isle of Pines has since been returned to the government of Cuba without compensation or reward of any kind or character.

happy and prosperous, and the United States has been made to realize that she has been a real benefactor to Cuba and her people.

So long as a nation accepts a mandate, a protectorate or an occupancy of another country and people, whether by mutual agreement or otherwise, and proceeds to use that country and its people for the enrichment or material benefit of itself, at the expense of the moral and material good of the people whom they are expected to serve and help, so long will there obtain political chaos or one governmental crisis after another, which has been the history of Egypt since the British forced themselves on Egypt in 1882.

Everyone, both in Europe and America, who has kept close tab on the movements of England in Egypt for the past forty-six years, knows that the country of Egypt and its people have been exploited by these undesirable occupants. And it may also be expected that this system of exploitation will continue until England not alone controls the Sudan (and if possible the Suez Canal), but that every semblance of rightful interest or ownership therein held by the Egyptian people has been obliterated. This certainly will be the history unless, perchance, Egypt, by some way or another, may get the facts relative to the situation under reference before a court of international justice, the majority of the members of which are not British subjects. By all means, in the interim let the government of the United States make a start towards freeing this people of capitulatory rights (these so-called rights are fully discussed in another chapter) which were fastened upon her many years ago by a country, Turkey, which is now (thanks to heroic efforts at the Lausanne Conference) free of every semblance of foreign interference or domination.

Egypt, I am sure, would regard such an alliance as we have with Cuba as a thing greatly to be desired.\* One of the reasons alleged by Britain for her holding on to Egypt, as she has done for the past forty-six years, is that if she were to surrender her authority there, one of the other European countries would very soon take her place, and the last estate would be worse than the first. Such a provision as obtains between the United States and Cuba would obviate any such a procedure. No one of the Powers would, or could, I take it, object to such an alliance.

Prince Omar, the subject of this chapter, is an outstanding asset to his country, and if it is ever freed from foreign domination it will be largely due to efforts put forth by His Highness, supported by such patriots as Mustapha Nahas Pasha, His Excellency Samy Pasha, Marcus Hanna Pasha, Hon. William Mackram, His Excellency Boutros Gahli Pasha, and a host of other loyal patriotic Egyptians.

We may express the hope that their Herculean efforts to free their country of undesirable foreign invaders will result, as in Turkey and in China, in complete deliverance from such, so that, in deed and in truth, Egypt will be a Sovereign and Independent State.

How often have I heard it said that Egypt owes its present plethoric(?) financial state wholly to the influence of British management of her affairs. At this point I wish to record a few figures to demonstrate that such a statement is out of conformity with the facts.

Cotton is the staple product of Egypt, and from the sale of this article she derives her principal wealth. I herewith

---

\*If such could be made with a country in which she felt by past experience she could place an abiding trust.

append figures taken from government statistics for a period of twenty-nine years—1895 to 1924—showing that it is the price at which Egyptian cotton has sold and is now selling which has brought about such wealth as they may be said to enjoy, and not British influence or management of her internal affairs.

From 1895 to 1899, four years, there were 1,090,000 acres devoted to the raising of cotton, with an average yield of 547 pounds of cotton and 1,221 pounds of cotton seed per acre. The average price paid for those products for the four years being: cotton \$10.05 per 100 pounds, and \$2.50 for 330 pounds of cotton seed.

From 1900 to 1904, the area in cotton was 1,305,000 acres, with an average yield per acre of 467 pounds, the average yield of cotton seed per acre being 1,065 pounds. The average price paid for cotton was \$13.69 per 100 pounds, and the average price paid for cotton seed was \$3.10 for 330 pounds—which is equivalent to one ardab.

From 1905 to 1909, the area in cotton was 1,583,000 acres, with an average yield per acre of 403 pounds, and an average production of 977.03 pounds of cotton seed. Average price for cotton, \$18.21 per 100 pounds, and \$3.65½ for 330 pounds of cotton seed.

From 1910 to 1914, acreage in cotton, 1,711,000; average yield per acre, 427 pounds; average yield of cotton seed, 1,006½ pounds per acre. An average price of \$17.61 for 100 pounds of cotton was realized, and an average price of \$4.12 was paid for 330 pounds of cotton seed.

Illustrating the point which I am trying to make here, showing that the plethoric(?) condition has not been dependent upon British occupancy but upon the price of her greatest agricultural commodity — cotton — I wish the reader to especially note the figures for 1915 to 1919, for

it will thus be seen that the price for 100 pounds of cotton during this quadrennium was more than four times the price which obtained during the same period of time from 1895 to 1899, and the price of the seed was more than five times that which was paid during the same period. This proportion of increase in price was very nearly maintained for the next four years—1920 to 1924.

Years	Area in Acres	Average Yield per Acre	Average Yield of Seeds per Acre	Average Price per 100 lbs. of Cotton	Average Price of Seeds per Ardab (equivalent to 330 lbs.)
1895 to 1899	1,090,000	15 47	3.71	10 05	50 0
1900 to 1904	1,305,000	4 67	3 23	13.69	62.0
1905 to 1909	1,583,000	4.03	2 91	18 21	72.9
1910 to 1914	1,711,000	4 27	3 05	17 61	82.4
1915 to 1919	1,482,000	3.58	2.74	45 03	125.8
1920 to 1924	1,684,000	3 67	2 81	35 94	123.7

<sup>1</sup>5.47 cantarrahs is equivalent to 547 pounds.

<sup>2</sup>The average yield per acre in seeds is given above in ardabs, one ardab being equal to 330 pounds.

<sup>3</sup>The price (average) per hundred pounds of cotton is in dollars.

<sup>4</sup>The average price of an ardab (330 pounds) is given above in piasters, one piaster being equivalent to five cents. So that when an ardab sold for fifty piasters it was equivalent to \$2.50.





## CHAPTER XII

### ISMAIL PASHA

AS above noted, the successor of Saiad Pasha was Ismail, a son of Ibrahim, the noted general, and a grandson of Mohammed Ali. He came to the throne in 1863, at the mature age of forty-eight. He had been given a liberal education in Europe, and this training, with high social position which he enjoyed while there, had rendered him very familiar with western ideas of civilization. The knowledge thus acquired he used to splendid advantage on his return to his native country, particularly so when, as Khedive, he came into almost complete control of its political affairs. It will be recalled that soon after his accession to the throne additional rights and privileges were granted him by the Turkish government over those enjoyed by any of his predecessors. While his grandfather, Mohammed Ali, had, after a number of successful military expeditions secured for himself, in 1830, hereditary sovereignty of the Turkish law of succession (which provides that the successor shall be the oldest heir), the right of concluding non-political treaties and appointing Egyptian officials up to the rank of Colonel, Ismail Pasha, four years after he came to the throne, or in 1867, obtained permission to adopt the royal title of "Khedive-El-Misr," or king of Egypt (termed later Khedive), and European principle of succession, that is from father to son, instead of to the oldest heir. In 1873, another firman gave to the Khedive the right of making treaties with foreign

powers and of maintaining armies. This grant or firman made him the absolute authority of his country—virtually an absolute monarch. There was, however, connected with this agreement or decree a provision making it obligatory upon the part of the Khedive to pay to the Sultan \$3,600,000 annually. This active ruler now busied himself in constructing canals and railways, establishing schools, formulating plans for a satisfactory jurisprudence, which finally resulted in the establishment of the Mixed Courts of Egypt in 1875. It will be recalled that while permission to construct the Canal was given by the Viceroy to De Lesseps in 1856, it was not until 1859 that the work was actually begun.

The British government, at the head of which was Lord Palmerson, had thrown every possible obstacle in the way of this enterprise, for purely selfish reasons; as it was then believed, or argued, it would render less safe their political and commercial interests in the Far East, India and China. However, the work continued to make progress under the humane and far-sighted ruler, Saiad Pasha, until his death in 1863, when our subject, Ismail, became his successor. He, like his predecessor, gave to this enterprise every possible assistance. He subscribed and paid for 176,602 shares of 400,000 issued. It was found, on completion of the Canal, November 17, 1869, that it had cost nineteen millionpoundssterling, approximately \$95,000,000, of which amount the Khedive paid more than one-third. To carry forward the various enterprises the Khedive had permitted himself to become heavily involved in debt to various European powers, borrowing huge sums of money for which he was paying exorbitant rates of interest. His inability to meet the demands of his creditors forced him to make sacrificing dispositions of valuable holdings,



THE LATE ISMAIL PASHA

Father of His Majesty, King Fuad I. of Egypt and late Khedive of Egypt. A photo taken in his youth.



THE LATE ISMAIL PASHA  
Late Khedive of Egypt.

which securities, in due course of time, would have rendered him solvent, or able to pay in full the amount of his liabilities. Among his assets was the valuable stock in the Suez Canal above mentioned. It is stated that when the Khedive concluded it was imperative for him to dispose of these stock holdings, he sent a representative to France to negotiate their sale, and that while the latter was dining with a shrewd newspaper reporter from England, representing the British press, he let fall a remark with regard to his mission to France which led the Englishman to believe that this stock was for sale, and this information was quickly conveyed to the British government, of which Benjamin Disraeli was the head. This rather astute politician and statesman lost no time in quietly driving a bargain for these bonds.

This official act and accomplishment of Disraeli is spoken of in the closing paragraph of Foude's "Life of the Britisher," as recorded in the "World's History of Foreign Statesmen" as the outstanding one of his official life. He says: "Of all these achievements there remain only to his nation the Suez Canal shares and the possession of Cyprus, and to his queen the gaudy title of Empress of India. All else that Beaconsfield did for England has either been undone or forgotten."

While England had fought in every conceivable way, except by force of arms, under Lord Palmerson's direction to prevent the construction of this great enterprise, this government was now, the Canal completed, anxious to secure control of it; and so, before the other nations were aware of the scheme or desire for the disposition of this stock, Disraeli had purchased it for twenty million dollars. In this sale the Khedive sustained a loss of more than twelve million dollars. Consummation of this sale took

place in 1875, when the Canal was shown, after the lapse of only five years, to be on a safe, growing and paying basis. This was proven by the number of vessels and aggregate tonnage from 1870 to 1875: Number of vessels in 1870, 435; aggregate tonnage, 493,911; in 1875, number of vessels, 1,494; aggregate tonnage, 2,009,984.

The forced sale of this stock to a nation and people who had done their utmost to thwart this laudable enterprise was but a sample of the manner in which advantage was taken of this forward-going, highly enterprising ruler; and so matters financial went on, from bad to worse, until the Dual Control (an Anglo-French condominium) was, under duress, forced upon him. That is, England and France agreed to supervise the financial and domestic interests of the country, after a firman had been issued by the Porte authorizing the deposition of the Khedive and appointing, under previous agreement, his eldest son, Tewfik Pasha, to succeed him. This dual form of government was, I think, at no time regarded as a success, and came to an end in 1882 when Arabi Pasha, with an armed force, endeavored to bring to an end the administration of governmental affairs by this foreign element. France declined to interfere militarily; but England, alleging that she had pledged herself to uphold the Khedive, and since (as she claimed to believe) the control of the Suez Canal was in danger, decided to take matters into her own hands.

It would seem difficult to understand just how it could be made out by the British that this water-way was in jeopardy when it is recalled that it was constructed through the influence of Saiad Pasha and his immediate successor, Ismail Pasha, by Egyptian labor, and largely with the money of the Egyptian government and its peo-

ple, while the government now claiming to guard its interests was doing everything possible, as above noted, to thwart the plan. Again, their claim to have interfered in this domestic affair, by reason of their desire to support the new Khedive, would appear, in the light of what has transpired since in their relations with this country, difficult to understand, for they, officially, at the time, disavowed all purpose of annexing Egypt or establishing a protectorate over it. History, for the past forty-five years, discloses whether or not their original profession as to their interference in the affairs of the Egyptian people squares with their conduct officially here. The ruler, Tewfik, whom they professed they only desired to support, ruled for ten years after this interference, and was succeeded on his death by his son, Abbas Hilmi, who was on the throne for twenty years, or until the opening of the World War, when he was dethroned by the British for the reason, alleged by them, that his sympathies were with Germany and Turkey. I think it may be safely stated that there has been no time since the Arabi insurrection was put down, to which reference has been made, up to this moment, when it was not desired, by both the Egyptian rulers and the fellaheen, to rule and be ruled without foreign dictation. But we have seen this foreign element, or influence, year by year intrenching itself more firmly than ever, until 1922, when, after a long, hard, and what would appear to be a most cruel contest, Egypt was enabled to experience independence, at least, of a limited character. Of this independence I shall have something to say in another chapter. As to whether the Suez Canal bonds held by Ismail Pasha were secured in an honest, straightforward manner, the reader may judge for himself from the evidence here adduced.



Ismail Pasha, after his enforced abdication by the British, joined by the French in 1879, was succeeded, as above stated, by his eldest son, Tewfik, a well-disposed young man who was noted especially for his piety, love of peace, and home. He was a devout Mohammedan, but there was no fanaticism practised or tolerated toward those who held different religious views during his administration.

### SUEZ CANAL

Reference has been made to the Suez Canal, and the desirability of the British to control same. Apropos further of this question, I wish to call attention to a most interesting article in the "North American Review" (March, 1928), from the pen of Judge Pierre Crabites, the American Judge, at Cairo, of the Mixed Court, under the caption, "Trustees of the Sphinx", in which, with reference to the Suez Canal, he says: "But while we may, therefore, use British lenses in examining this judicial problem (the author here refers to the desirability of our agreeing with Great Britain on the extension of power of the Mixed Courts of Egypt), it by no means follows that the eventual fate of Egypt is of no moment to us. I do not mean," he continues, "by this that we should interfere in the details of such arrangements as London and Cairo may see fit to elaborate for the internal administration of the country whose scepter is now held by the dynasty of Mohammed Ali. But among the 'reserved' points there figures what is known as the 'security of the Communications of the British Empire.' This language is but an euphemistic way of saying that England can only see its way clear to withdraw its troops from the Nile Valley provided Egypt agrees to allow it to maintain an armed force within the

Suez Canal Zone and to take such steps as will assure it that the sweet water which supplies this belt shall at all times be accessible to British control.

"Our interest in this feature of the matter resides in the facts that the United States is a maritime power, and that the neutrality of the Suez Canal is guaranteed by treaty. Now that the Geneva Conference has shattered our hopes for a naval holiday, we are constrained to keep our eyes open, however sincere and abiding our friendship may be for those who speak our language." Then the author under reference calls attention to the importance of this waterway being strictly managed in conformity with the international treaty, and makes the point that "we should not forget that our flag floats over the Philippines, and that those islands lie near the capital of a State which but yesterday was an ally of Great Britain. Should the Mikado ever be tempted to aspire to take over Manila, it would be detrimental to our interests to be confronted by a Suez Canal policy, which is against the letter and spirit of the international agreements which presided over the birth of that waterway, and which have been confirmed by solemn pacts. In other words, it is specifically 'nominated in the bond' that neither Egypt nor any other power shall ever have the right of maintaining armed forces or embarking or unloading troops or munitions of war in the Suez Canal Zone." At this point the author calls attention to the fact that this covenant was violated during the great war. Of course, all readers of history understand that it was England who violated this obligation. A violation of a solemn treaty, as was done in the case of Germany entering Belgium with her troops, was alleged to be an act of perfidy and dishonor. But for England to have violated the international treaty of unloading troops in the

Suez Canal Zone, I suppose we are to condone as a military necessity.

In this connection it is of interest to recall that the territory through which passes this international waterway (the Suez Canal) is Egyptian territory, never purchased by any one of the Powers, or combination of them, as was done by the United States of America in the case of the Panama Canal Zone. A concession only was given to the Canal company by the Egyptian government for a period of ninety-nine years, and, therefore, this territory will revert to the Egyptian government at the expiration of this period, which will be in 1969.





HIS HIGHNESS, PRINCE MOHAMMED ALI

## CHAPTER XIII

### TEWFIK PASHA — ABBAS HILMI II.

**T**EWFIK PASHA, successor of his father, Ismail Pasha, married Ameeneh Hanim El Hamee, one of the most beautiful and accomplished women, who still survives him.

She is known as the "Queen Mother", and lives in a beautiful palace in Cairo, immediately across the street from the American Legation, and in the vicinity of the Simerimis hotel. During the winter months she lives in this palace and spends the summer, or heated term, in Constantinople. She is the mother of the ex-Khedive, Abbas Hilmi, Prince Mohammed Ali, and Princess Kemel El Dein, whose husband is the only son of the late Sultan Hussein. The ex-Khedive Abbas has not been permitted to return to his native country since his dethronement in 1914, while he was on a visit to Constantinople at the opening of the World War. When he left Egypt at this time, his Prime Minister, Rushdi Pasha, was appointed by him as Regent, and though his faithful servant tried in every way to defend the throne, he was unable to cope with the British, who had declared a Protectorate over Egypt and demanded that the Khedive be dethroned, on the ground that he was allied in sympathy, and in action as well, with Turkey or the Central Powers. Under what might be termed legal duress he was compelled to dispose of all his material interests in Egypt. The mother and

Prince Mohammed Ali were kept from Egypt for some time after the war, but they are now living in Cairo, enjoying their property and interests as before the war.

Prince Mohammed Ali, a bachelor of fine personality, occupies a palace in Cairo surrounded by a garden, both of which are among the most beautiful in the world. He is a fine linguist, an artist of no mean ability, an extensive traveler, and popular both among the Egyptians and Europeans.

Abbas Hilmi, the ex-Khedive, grandson of Ismail, who came to the throne in 1882, on the death of his father, Tewfik, and who was at school in Europe with his youngest brother when his father rather suddenly passed away, was far more aggressive politically than his father, and showed in various ways his displeasure at British influence and interference with Egyptian affairs. It was during the early part of his reign (1898) that the insurrection which had obtained for some time in the Sudan was put down by the so-called Anglo-Egyptian army. The fact is that the Mahdists, or followers of the religious fanatic, Mahdi, who precipitated this rebellion, were conquered by the Egyptian army which was led in a large measure by British officers. The complete expense of equipping and maintaining this army, as heretofore stated, was paid from the Egyptian treasury. This latter observation is particularly worthy of note, as we shall see when discussing the Sudan.

## ABBAS HILMI II.

There are two books on the British in Egypt written by scholarly, straightforward, honest Englishmen that I wish every American, every man, woman, and child in the world who believe in honesty, truth and equity, might

read. I refer to the "Secret History of the English Occupation of Egypt", by Wilfrid Scarven Blunt, published by Chiswick Press, Charles Wittingham and Company, in 1895, and "The New Egypt", by Francis Adams, published by T. Fisher Unwin, London, in 1893, eleven years after the "occupancy" of Egypt by the British. Both of these men spoke from an abundance of experience secured from the Egyptian people and the British colony there, since the British forced their way into Egypt under what these writers denominate a deceptive promise.

Blunt occupied a financial and social status of the highest order. He married the grand-daughter of Lord Byron, and had always conducted himself in such a manly and dignified manner as to give him entree to the homes of the most scholarly and distinguished men of England.

Francis Adams was scholastic, honest, conscientious, and a devoted lover of justice and fair play. On his return to his native land, England, he diligently applied himself to the recording of facts observed in Egypt, but died before the book was finished. Abbas II. was on the throne and Cromer was the British Consul-General at the time of his (Adams's) visit. Mr. Adams regarded the presence of the British in Egypt, after the lapse of eleven years, as manifestly unjust and out of keeping with the promise of British authorities made to the Egyptians upon their entering Egypt in 1882; and, realizing he had but a short time to live, he desired to make his people see, in his dying statement, that England was disloyal to her pledge to the Egyptians when entering her official gates in 1882. The editor's preface is so striking and interesting that I give it below.

Doubtless Mr. Adams, if he were living today, would take some pride in the prognosis he made thirty-five years



ago to Khedive Abbas, at the time of his first interview with this young sovereign, with respect to the future action of the British in Egypt. I shall want to take some time to record this talk between the Khedive and Mr. Adams, but first let us see the preface of the editor of the book under reference. I quote:

"The author was at work on this book up to the evening of Saturday, September 2, 1893. On the following Monday morning he died. Unfortunately the MSS. was not quite complete; a final chapter would have described the present Nationalist movement in Egypt. Nor were the completed parts revised and corrected with the minute care which Mr. Adams was in the habit of bestowing on his writings.

"In spite of this, it has been thought well to publish 'The New Egypt'. Mr. Adams came back from Alexandria in the early summer of this year, imbued with the strongest and deepest feeling of sympathy for the country and people of Egypt. He at once set himself to the task of writing a book which should, as he hoped and believed, put the circumstances of the English occupation in a truer light, and which should help to remove what he considered the ignorance or indifference of Englishmen with regard to Egyptian affairs.

"Mr. Adams was in exceedingly bad health; he knew he had not long to live, but resolutely made up his mind to complete this task if possible. For the last three months of his life he thought of nothing, cared for nothing, but the writing of this book. That once done, he was ready for death, and there is no doubt that it was this strong desire to help the Nationalist movement in Egypt which enabled him to battle so long against disease. Every page was written with effort, in constant struggle with growing

weakness, but on every page he felt he was writing the truth as only a dying man could.

"It is the knowledge of these facts which induces the present editor to produce 'The New Egypt', in spite of its imperfections, incompleteness, and even its inaccuracies and traces of the physical weakness of the writer. Some of the author's friends may think the book does scant justice to his known literary power. Be that as it may, the book is Mr. Adams's final effort against what he deemed to be corruption and wrong; to see it published was the one thing he cared to live for, and now that he is dead, it cannot be held back.

"J. W. LONGSDON."

I now wish to record the interview between the Khedive Abbas and Mr. Adams as showing the accuracy with which he, the author, was enabled after his interview with Cromer and many other Englishmen both at home and in Egypt, to prognosticate the British policy as regards its future treatment of the people and country which they, the British, claimed they desired to help with a view of quitting the country when their task was done. Mr. Adams in his book, on page 141, describes the home and palace of the Khedive, Abbas Hilmi; the ease and grace with which he was received by the young sovereign; and his surprise at meeting a man of such magnificent personal appearance, after the photographs he had seen in England of this ruler—all of which were absurd.

He then proceeds to dispose of the "popular myth of our Press." He says, after talking with this intellectual man for a short time, to quote his own words: "In one minute, therefore, the whole myth, the popular myth of our Press, the idea I had of him and his appearance, his manner and his character, went straight off into chaos.

The sullen and willful schoolboy, whom a parvenu politician on the warpath has just insulted in the House of Commons, as 'young, vain, and fanatical', the rather heavy-looking young man decked out with regalia, and posed 'for this occasion only', whom you see in the official photograph; instead of this lifeless figure there was, sitting opposite me now, an exceedingly alert, charming, and intelligent man with an unmistakable personal magnetism of his own."

Now the interview is about to begin, and Mr. Adams observes: "I don't know whether it was right, but the first remark, after his desire for me to be seated, came from me."

Q. "Do I understand, Your Highness, that I am to speak in English, or in French?"

A. "Speak in English. I shall understand you perfectly. If I do not I will tell you," and he smiled.

"After some eight or ten minutes on general subjects," Mr. Adams says, "we drifted imperceptibly toward England, and at last my chance came."

Q. "Your Highness has been in England?"

A. "Yes, but it was only as a child."

Q. "You formed some impressions of it—disagreeable ones, perhaps? It is so declared, at least, in one of the English papers."

A. "No," he said, "I formed no impressions at all, except as a child would."

Q. "Then there is no truth in the statement of the prejudice Your Highness had formed right from your childhood against the English and in favor of the French?"

A. "Oh, no truth at all . . . I have had to begin my real acquaintance with things here. I have only been here

a year. I have many difficulties, but I desire to see all and listen to all. I have a great appreciation of the English and what they have done for Egypt. It would not be possible otherwise. I have no prejudice like that."

Q. "Then Your Highness can doubtless do justice to the sense of duty in certain Englishmen which has compelled them, however reluctantly, to oppose your wishes?"

A. "Oh, yes; oh, yes. But you may understand that, with all this, I may not think we have been treated quite justly—quite fairly."

Q. "Might I ask in what Your Highness considers that England has not treated you quite justly and fairly?"

A. "I will try and tell you. You see it is this way: There are, as you say, two sides to every question. Is not that an English saying? (I acquiesced.) Well, in this question—in this question of our affairs in Egypt—it seems to me there has been only one. Events happen here. Very well. Lord Cromer telegraphs to Lord Rosebery and says: 'Such, and such, and such is the case.' Lord Rosebery—he says to the Prime Minister, Mr. Gladstone, and all the other ministers: 'Such, and such, and such is the case.' Very well. Then it is decided that such and such and such shall be done by England, and it is done at once." After a pause of a few moments, Mr. Adams says, he proceeded by saying: "Meanwhile, Lord Rosebery says to the English Parliament, 'Gentlemen, such and such and such is the case in Egypt, and we have done such and such and such,' and every one says that is quite right. And this history of what has happened is the only history that is given to the English newspapers and to the English people, and they all say that is quite right. But we—you understand, we—we are not quite so content with this, because we think it is only one side of the ques-

tion; and then, you know, there are two sides to every question. Is not that so?"

Q. "Your Highness, it is impossible, I think, to deny that this is not fair. Do I understand that, even right up to now, nothing, absolutely nothing in the way of explanation or defense of the line of action Your Highness pursued has been brought before Lord Rosebery, or the Cabinet, or the House of Commons, or the English Press, or the English people?"

A. "How can that be? We are placed like that. We have none to speak for us—no one—no one."

Q. "Is there no Egyptian Consul or Agent in London who could contradict with authority, what he had been told was not true, or who should at least state to the public press what Your Highness has called 'the other side of the question'?"

A. "There is only the Turkish Consulate. We have only that."

At this juncture Mr. Adams states that he had an inner thought, which was: "Expediency may justify this—this committal of a nation to decisive action, action entailing perhaps floods of blood and treasure; but justice or right, there is none in it, and I can't look this man in the face and falter on the subject." Then he indicated he was so abashed that for a time he could but hold his tongue and turn his eyes downward, contemplating the boots of the Khedive. Interesting as is this interview up to this point, it is not the most interesting part of it. Let us see how the matter in respect to the restoration of Egypt by the English was viewed.

Before recording questions and answers to this phase of the subject, I wish to call the reader's attention to the fact that the British had already been in Egypt eleven years

when this interview took place, and that thirty-five years have elapsed since this date, and they are still there, occupying for their officials and for their arms, which number at this time twenty thousand, the best locations and vantage points in all Egypt. These soldiers march the streets in dress parade every day, and the High Commissioner rides in state through the streets of Cairo with outriders like the King. He orders special trains, at Egypt's expense, for the accommodation of himself and his staff; enters and makes his exit at the station through the King's gate; and insisted, until a protest was made by the diplomatic corps, that he be given a special seat outside the fold of the corps, and that his carriage be parked next that of the King's on all public occasions. I may add that, until a protest was made by myself, afterwards joined in by the entire corps, he insisted, too, that when going to and returning from the railroad station on public occasions, such as meeting the King, that all foreign representatives, except himself, take a circuitous route to the station and enter same at a side entrance, while he only, entered over the red carpet, the King's door. He took precedence over the King's representative and the Prime and Foreign Ministers on all public occasions. This and much more could be recorded in truth as to his—Lloyd's—not Lord Allenby's—official attitude in Egypt. But let us, for a brief period, see a little more of this interview.

"The Khedive here observes: 'Lord Cromer says he wishes the Egyptian people to be educated, as quickly as possible, to be automatons. Well, that is good. But how shall they be educated to be automatons if they are never able to speak at all, not given to open their mouths? Upon my word, when I read that little book which they printed for your House of Parliament, and which I am told

(Is it so?) that they sell all over England for less than a piastre (a piastre is equivalent to five cents); when I read there, and in all the English papers, what the young Khedive has been doing lately, I think to myself, what a bad person I must be. But, upon my word, I did not know I acted that way at all. I thought myself that I acted in quite another way, and then I think that this must have been another person.' ”

At this juncture, Mr. Adams relates, “the Khedive lay back, laughing heartily. After a little he resumed his observations, saying: ‘But what does this matter, really, in the end? We have confidence in the English. We know that they will give us back Egypt as soon as they think they can do it, and there is no danger in waiting a little longer time for our independence,’ and he shrugged his shoulders. ‘But in the meantime we should be more content, perhaps more satisfied with England; if we could speak more to the English themselves in England; if they could know from us what our sentiments and wishes are—what is our side of the question, as you say.’ Then,” says Mr. Adams, “he suddenly asked me—‘You believe also that the English will give back Egypt?’ ” Now listen to Mr. Adam’s musings and comments: “‘No, I do not believe it. I may be wrong, but I do not believe—I do not believe it a bit.’ And it is some time since I have felt so uncomfortable as I felt then, with my eyes fixed on those clear hazel eyes a few feet from mine, and this question jumped upon me like a flash of lightning: ‘Does Your Highness mean my own individual opinion?’ ”

“‘I asked you,’ the Khedive replied—‘I asked you to tell me if you thought the English would give back Egypt?’ ” “No, Your Highness,” Mr. Adams replied, “personally I do not believe it.” Says Mr. Adams: “The

thunderclap came in a moment: with flashing eyes and his face one even ruddy hue all over, he sat up, looking past me, ejaculating, now slowly, now in rapid jerks. 'But that is not possible. It is not possible! A promise is a promise. It is the honor of England—pledged again and again. A promise is a promise. It is not possible.' "

"Then," says Mr. Adams, this keen British writer and discerner of the intentions of his own government with respect to its official procedure towards Egypt, "the Khedive, looking at me again, said in astonishment, 'But in the speech of the Queen—the speech in your House of Parliament—you have read that?' 'Yes, Your Highness.' 'And you do not . . . you do not believe it? You think it is not true?'" Mr. Adams says: "I answered nothing. I was noticing the additional fact in connection with His Highness's boots, that they were laced up spiral from top to bottom in a peculiar manner which has impressed itself on my memory with a grotesque vividness. I heard him repeat, as if to himself, 'But it is impossible. A promise is a promise . . . the pledged honor of England . . . It is impossible.' "

I submit that this history is a very severe indictment against the pledged word of the British government, made when they forced themselves in upon this people. As indicated, thirty-six years have passed since this interview. If one should need further proof of the fine propaganda sent out by the British against the Prince and ruler, Abbas, he should read the published record of Abbas II., by Earl of Cromer, or "Modern Egypt", two volumes, by the same writer. Both books are full of one side of the question—British propaganda from start to finish. Cromer, in his book on Abbas II., relates how the Khedive was under surveillance wherever he went, whether in his own country



or in a foreign one. On page 63 he says, "The Khedive paid highly in the shape of loss of prestige and reputation for the experience gained in the three years which immediately followed his succession. Nevertheless, that experience was of great benefit to him. He learned that it was useless openly to resist British policy in Egypt." Yes, it was "experience of great benefit."

## CHAPTER XIV

### FUAD I.

IN giving a review of the life and reign of those who have occupied the throne during this dynasty from its founder, Mohammed Ali, down to the present occupant of the throne, we have necessarily been more or less brief as to our biography. However, the life and accomplishments of the present ruler, His Majesty Fuad I., by reason of the high situation or exalted position which has come to him, and not hitherto enjoyed by any one of his immediate predecessors; his known scholastic attainment; marked devotion to his people's welfare, long before he came to the throne or expected to do so; dearth of knowledge concerning all these virtues and accomplishments by people of other countries; together with studied, determined effort upon the part of those who wish to discount the Egyptian people and their rulers in the estimation of foreigners; demand a more extended account of his life and accomplishments.

His Majesty is the youngest son of the Khedive Ismail, grandson of the great general, and for a very short period khedive, Ibrahim Pasha; great grandson of Mohammed Ali, the intrepid military chieftain who became the first governor of Egypt, and as noted, the founder of the present dynasty. The King was born in Cairo, Guizeh Palace, on the 26th day of March, 1868. He is the ninth sovereign of the dynasty, succeeding Sultan Hussein October 9, 1914. His father, being a man of liberal educa-

tion, appreciated the importance of education, and saw to it that his family was given every advantage in this respect. At the early age of ten years our subject was sent to Europe to enter school and receive instruction at the Tudicum Institute at Geneva. Later he entered the International Institute at Turin, and at the age of seventeen, the Military Academy at Turin. There he pursued the courses of the School of Practical Artillery and Military Engineering, and was admitted to the army as a lieutenant, in the 13th Regiment of Field Artillery in Garrison at Rome. At the age of twenty-two the Sultan of Turkey appointed him military attache at the Turkish Embassy at Vienna.

Wherever he went in these various countries, whether in the capacity of student or official, he was received into the royal families, not alone as a Prince, but as a young man possessing those qualifications of head and heart which readily recommend him to their good graces. While in Europe, his brother Tewfik Pasha died, and, as heretofore stated, his elder son, Abbas, in the early part of 1892, succeeded him, and early in his reign requested his uncle, Fuad, to enter his counsel at the capital. Later he served with distinction in the Egyptian army and then as Aide-de-Camp in chief to the khedive. After three years' service he resigned to devote himself more directly, as he believed, to the interests of his countrymen along the lines of intellectual and moral uplift.

Scholar himself that he is, coming in direct contact with his people and observing their needs, he saw the necessity, if they were to be a prosperous and contented people, of better educational facilities for them. The foreign element, or those of such who had been largely in authority since 1882 and up to this time, had given themselves or

their efforts almost wholly to the development of material interests; and while their endeavor along this line did rebound somewhat to the financial betterment of the fellah, yet he was left in abject ignorance, to live in villages surrounded by squalor and filth, unspeakably bad, with an attendant mortality that surpassed that of any country upon the face of the earth.

The foreign occupants desired the cotton, and knew from past experience that, notwithstanding the frightful mortality, as well as the terrible attendant results of various contagious and infectious diseases like diphtheria, scarlet fever and trachoma, the lines of laboring men would continue to be filled by reason of the growing population. Apropos of this condition as respects insanitation, and the imperative requisites for the control of illiteracy, as seen by Prince Fuad, I may say that I was so impressed by these awful conditions, upon my arrival in Egypt on my official mission in 1921, that I began to give to the matter of insanitation and illiteracy, as I went up and down the various provinces, careful study. And when asked by the Alumni Association of the American University of Beyrout, in Cairo, to deliver an address before that body, on December 20, 1922, I accepted the invitation, and chose for my subject "Sanitation", and said in part as follows:

"I desire but briefly to dwell on a subject which, it seems to me, is of prime importance to this country, to wit: 'Illiteracy and its twin companion, Insanitation, with all their terrible sequels.' I wish first to call to your attention some few accomplishments of the medical profession within the past few years to demonstrate what may be done by a consecrated, intelligent effort to benefit the masses. Typhoid fever, that was until recently the

scourge of the people, in both civil and military life, is now almost wholly under our control by adherence to well-known laws of sanitation. Diphtheria, the bane of existence of child life, since the discovery of the Klebs-Loeffler bacillus and the use of antitoxin, has been robbed of its terror. As to yellow and malaria fevers, we stand in awe when we think of the countless millions who have filled untimely graves as the result of these two diseases, now absolutely under control by reason of scientific investigation.

"When I was in Panama a few winters ago, I recalled the fact that not long ago this canal zone, controlled by the United States, was, perhaps of all places in the world, the most pestilential, by reason of the prevalence there of these two diseases, and that since the discovery that two distinct, well-defined classes of mosquitoes were the etiological factors in the development of these maladies, and by reason of their discovery elimination was made everywhere possible, I was prompted to uncover my head and thank God for such men as Walter Reed and Agramonti, who, placing their bodies on the altar of sacrifice, made this thing possible. It would be but criminal negligence for us not to use every human endeavor to hold these diseases under control. Of course, I could go on *ad infinitum* along the lines of the accomplishments of this noble profession, but I pause to say that there remains much yet to be done. Illiteracy and insanitation, you will permit me to say, are operating in tragic form and gigantic proportions, not only in your back yards, but on your front doorsteps.

"In this country, where architecture was developed to a point of sublimity and grandeur never attained by any other nation or people, and where was stored for research



HIS MAJESTY, KING FUAD I OF EGYPT



HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS PRINCE FAROUK  
Heir to the Throne of Egypt.

the finest library then known, all five thousand years before many of the countries from which we owe our origin were even known to exist, make or render this indictment to which I have referred all the more awful and tragic.

"I respectfully submit to you that for Egypt to have a continuous and continued government, in which all the people are made recipients of those God-given rights and privileges to which they are justly entitled, there must be put into active motion those now well-known rules of practical and scientific laws of health or hygiene, which will forever eliminate this blighting curse, and reverse the ratio of illiteracy which today stands as ninety-five to five. People in affluent circumstances must be made to feel and see that they are their 'brother's keeper', and that it is 'more blessed to give than to receive'. They must recognize the importance, as well as be shown, the advantages of taking these benighted people from pens scarcely good enough for the housing of sheep or cattle, surrounded by flies, mosquitoes, and filth, partaking of food and water of highly dangerous character, and placing them in an environment and in an enlightened condition of mind and body. Children should be removed from the workshops and streets, and given a chance to cultivate both the mind and the body to a degree of self-preservation, to be made an asset instead of a liability to the government.

"In Egypt, in 1918, occurred 35,246 cases of typhus fever, with a resulting mortality from this one disease alone of 7,354 cases, nearly thirty per cent. You had in the same year, of typhoid 3,118 cases, with a resulting death roll of 935 cases, or thirty per cent. The year 1921 showed a little better or lower mortality as to typhus, and likewise of typhoid, but the cases, both in number and from a mortality point of view, were frightfully high. This



in spite of an intelligent, alert, well-organized department of health, with men at the various heads, I should say, from what I have observed, of a very superior type. The total number of deaths in Cairo alone in 1919, not counting the deaths of nonresidents who died here, was 31,547, which gives an annual death rate of 41.4 per thousand. The infant mortality in Cairo alone in 1919 was 7,641. The mortality rate was 238 per thousand births. Nor is this all, appalling as these figures show the conditions to be; thousands are left, from the sequelae attendant upon these various diseases, in a condition worse than death. It is stated upon the best authority that ninety per cent of the people of Egypt are afflicted with trachoma, and this high percentage obtains among all children of school age. Of ten thousand cases seen at the ophthalmic hospital in 1909, six per cent were found to be blind in both eyes and 15.84 per cent were blind in one or both eyes. This is an awful indictment and calls for the most skilled brains, as well as the stoutest hearts, to solve. It has been shown that this disease of the eyes is fifty-five times greater than found throughout the United States of America."

"The etiology or causative factors and the character of the disease is known, and its cure and control is comparatively easy. What is the matter in Egypt, that no better results can be obtained, with all this scientific attainment as to either its cure or eradication? Ask your medical department at the board of health, and they can, and will answer, 'Ignorance, on the part of the great majority of this people, as to even the primitive laws, in the matter of health and its control.' What is the treatment? How may the problem be solved? Education. Education, you say, of the masses? Yes, and for those of the lowest stratum.

"Of course, by education I do not mean to imply that the fellaheen or their children need to be, of necessity, placed or prepared for the university; but I do mean to imply that they should be taught to read and write, and taught by means of the slide (or cinema), and otherwise, the laws or principles of sanitation and the things essential for the preservation of life and health."

Soon after this address, Dr. Carrie Buchanan, of the American Missions, one of the most devoted, intelligent and consecrated educators in Egypt, came to me expressing an earnest desire to put into action some scheme whereby the terrible situation as regards insanitation in the villages in Egypt, to which my address particularly called attention, might be improved. I suggested slides—cinema—such as were used by the Child Labor Bureau in the United States; that the people, parents and children would attend such a "show," and could be made to thoroughly understand the consequences of living in filth, surrounded by flies and mosquitoes, and would demand a better situation. This suggestion met with her hearty approval, and I used at once my good offices in an effort to secure a set of these slides from the Child's Bureau at Washington. I was successful in having a full set donated by this Bureau, and this work has been carried on in the various villages with marked benefit. Later I secured from the National Cash Register Company, of Dayton, Ohio, a donation for the American University of Cairo, a full set of slides showing the terrible results of certain infectious diseases, so prevalent among young men who subject themselves to wholly unnecessary risks of this character. These slides exhibited, as they were, on the screen to young college students, have, it is believed, had a great prophylactic effect in the reduction of such devastating diseases.

Later on, under the direction of His Majesty's physician, Dr. Shain Pasha, who is also Under-Secretary of State for Health, the government adopted this plan of instruction throughout the villages in the various provinces. The establishment of hospitals, pure food and milk depots, and reforms in various other ways, has done much to improve this frightful situation which obtained when His Majesty ascended the throne. This laudable work instituted by the government emanated from the king.

As I watched the work and labor of the sovereign in the interest of his people, handicapped as he was, and is, constantly, by political intrigue and foreign domination, I marveled at his courage, his indomitable spirit and his optimism. I saw and conversed with His Majesty often, but there was no time, even when political clouds were darkest, that he did not seem hopeful and would express himself in the sense that perseverance, in a tactful, patient manner, with a trust in God for guidance, would eventually result in victory.

In his untiring devotion to the great problems of state, which came to him in increasing numbers after February 28, 1922, when martial law and the protectorate were abolished, and Egypt was declared an Independent Sovereign State, he often reminded me, in his indefatigable work and his accomplishments of same, of President Roosevelt, although not accomplished in the same way—with "the big stick".

His intellectual work for his people was commenced in 1906, while only a Prince, and at which time, while talking to one of his friends on the subject of Egypt's needs and his duty in assisting the people thereof, he said: "It is nothing to be a Prince; it is something to be useful." It was at this time that he determined that Egypt should

have a university. By 1908 it was recognized as an institution and five courses were provided for the public. A library, consisting of fifteen thousand volumes, filled with information on science, art, literature, history, etc., was placed at the disposal of the student body; these volumes being gifts from sources which the Prince knew very well how to reach. I may add that under the protection and guidance of His Majesty this university has grown to such proportions that it now commands the respect of all the nations of Europe, and of America as well, and compares very favorably with their institutions in the work accomplished.

His Majesty is responsible for the existence of, and largely for the splendid results accomplished by, the Society of Political Economy. This organization brings into association all the men of science and intellect in Egypt. A periodical, "Contemporary Egypt", has repeatedly paid homage to this society. This publication is familiar to the student body of all countries.

I was particularly impressed while in Egypt with the prodigious amount of work performed by His Majesty in the interest of the Cairo Geographical Society (an integral part of the International Geographical Society), an organization formed by his august father, Khedive Ismail, in 1875, and which, by reason of great political dissension which arose during the latter part of his reign, had been allowed to lag in interest. It was in 1925 that the International Geographic Congress was held in Cairo, at which time delegates from every country in the world were present and took part in the splendid program.

It was before this great body of men, the choice of every government of their best men along lines of thought touching the subject of geography, that I had the honor of





presenting to Ahmed Hassanein Bey the Elisha Kent Kane medal awarded him by the Geographical Society of Philadelphia, by reason of his exploration of the Libyan Desert from Sollum to Darfus. In his reply to my remarks made in presenting the medal, it was refreshing to hear him, in the presence of this great body of men and women from all over the world, refer to his sovereign in a manner that evidenced the fact that it was largely at the King's instance and through his instrumentality that Hassanein Bey was able to record the most fascinating experience of his exploration in his book, "The Lost Oases".

Upon every hand I heard the most favorable comments from delegates to this congress as to its success, due to the influence and painstaking efforts of His Majesty. He was familiar with the reputation of every speaker, as well as with every subject handled by the various delegates. It was His Majesty who, in August, 1917, modified the statutes and brought its program up to date. As the founder of the Ethnographical Museum he has added objects of interest, duly classified and listed, and has specialized in ethnology with respect to the Nile Valley and adjacent territory.

In 1915 the King, then Prince Fuad, commenced giving thought to an organization for the study of hydrobiology, and recognized that Egypt, with her immense coast line extending along both the Mediterranean and Red Seas with distinct natural features and fauna, derived an infinitesimal profit from her heritage of the seas to which her natural surroundings justly entitled her.

In 1918 Prince Fuad had the satisfaction of seeing the founding of an institute for the study of hydrobiology crowned with success, as a Sultanic decree, approved in January of that year, gave his efforts official sanction



AHMED HASSANEIN BEY

First Secretary of the Egyptian Legation at Washington Now First Chamberlain to His Majesty the King and the Discoverer of the "Lost





to the existence of this enterprise. This scientific organization has proved of great financial benefit to Egypt and its surrounding territory. With respect to this institute we find in Field-Marshal Viscount Allenby's report for the year 1920, on the "Finances, Administrations and Conditions of Egypt and the Sudan," the following praiseworthy reference:

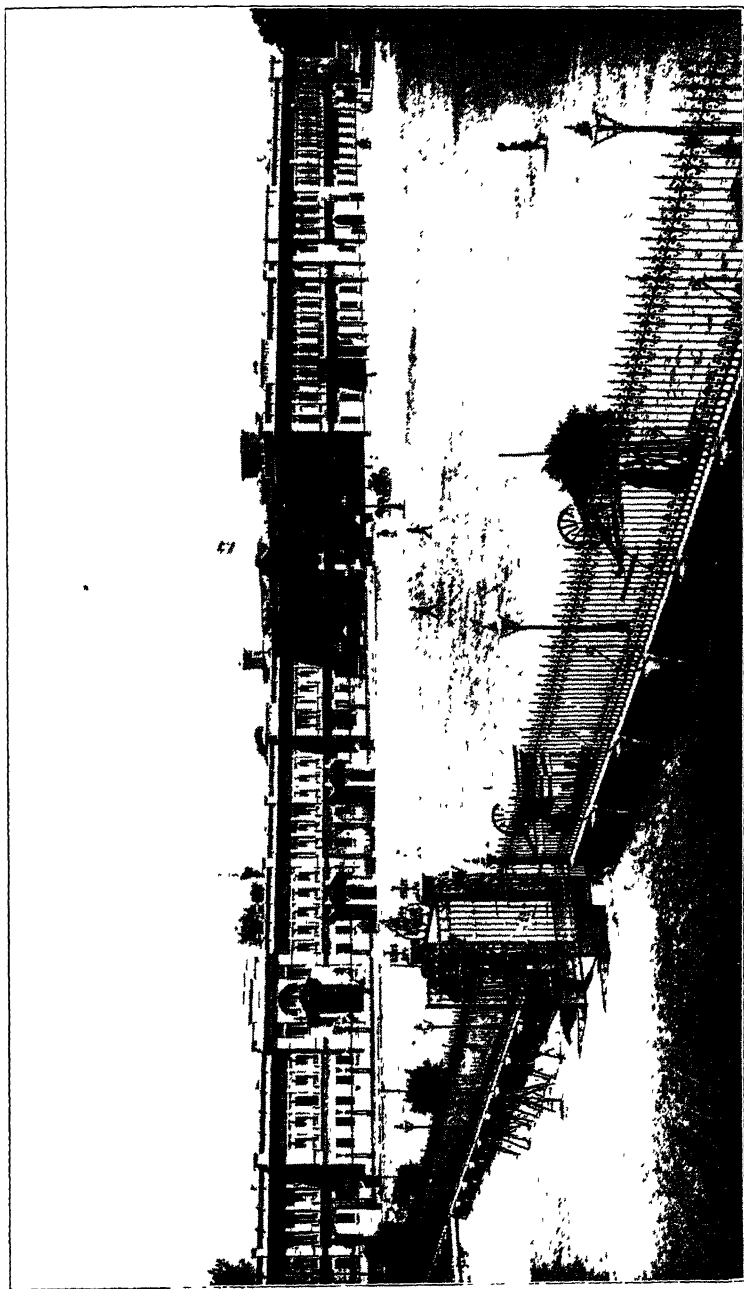
"The Hydrobiological Institute founded by decree, dated January 29, 1918, owes its existence principally to the initiative of His Highness the Sultan. It was inaugurated by His Highness on the 28th of October, 1919, and made considerable progress in spite of many difficulties. A large number of precious works of reference and scientific instruments were collected. The necessity for such an institute for researches into pisciculture is most evident, and it is proposed to gather together a large body of experts to study the future development of the present institute, as well as its relations with the Fisheries Service and the other departments of the State."

These are generous words coming from a man whose government has usurped the portfolio of Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Egyptian government. But if such praise was and is due His Highness with respect to the work just mentioned, what, in simple justice, is due him, in spite of having a foreign Judicial Advisor and Minister for Foreign Affairs not of his own choosing or from his own countrymen, when we contemplate the enormous machinery set into motion by him, in many other respects, such as establishment of the Egyptian association for attracting the notice of tourists, whereby, among other things, additional revenue might be effectively secured to enhance the prosperity of his people and thus provide against such a crisis, for instance, as was experienced by the country in 1907?

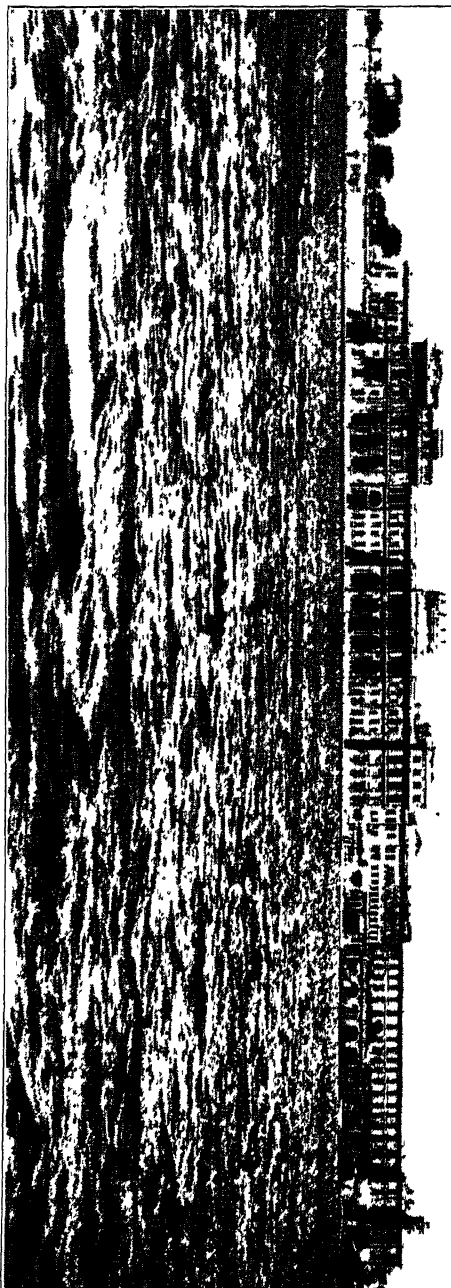
The remarkable increase of tourists to Egypt, during not only the winter months but spring and summer months as well, is the result of the work of this organization. During the season of 1926-1927 more than twelve thousand tourists, by far the greater number being Americans, visited this wonderful country, basked in her sunshine, and dreamed under the canopy of heaven, lighted with a moon and stars not to be found, it seems to me, any place else in the world.

While sunshine is to be found everywhere throughout Egypt during the winter months, one may find any temperature desired in the temperate zone. Remain at Alexandria if you wish the November climate of Ohio or any of the middle states; Cairo, if you prefer the May days, such as that of which the poet sings: "Sweet prospects, sweet birds and sweet flowers, when December is as pleasant as May," etc. If such temperature should be found too low, then take the white vestibuled train, one of the finest appointed trains in the world, which leaves Cairo every night at seven o'clock, and wend your way to Luxor, five hundred miles south, or to Aswan, two hundred miles further to the south, where you will find delightful June days and September nights and be entertained at all times in hotels second to none in any country of the world, and live among the treasures of a civilization 7,000 years old. Delightful Egypt!

Much as was accomplished by King Fuad as Prince and Sultan along these and other lines of help to his people, much more, we should say, has been done by him since the proclamation of the British government of February 28, 1922, was declared, making Egypt a "Sovereign and Independent State." This in spite of the fact that the four questions reserved by the British permitted her to con-



ABDIN PALACE, CAIRO



RAS EL TIN PALACE, ALEXANDRIA

tinue to hold the whip-hand over this people. These questions were and are, namely:

(1) The security of the communications of the British Empire in Egypt. (2) The defense of Egypt against all foreign aggression, direct or indirect. (3) The protection of foreign interests in Egypt and the protection of minorities. (4) The Sudan.

With reference to these questions some comment, with profit, might be made in the way of clarification. First, as to the security of British communications: This refers to the Suez Canal. Second, the defense of Egypt against foreign aggression means (a) for Great Britain to engage herself to participate in this defense; (b) for Egypt on her part to afford every military facility to Great Britain in event of the latter's being attacked by any foreign power. Third, protection of foreign interests and minorities: the minorities refer to the million of native Christians in Egypt known as Copts. As to the fourth question, the Sudan: Britain practically settled that question in a most arbitrary manner, wholly in the interest of herself, at the time of the ultimatum issued to the Egyptian government after the assassination of the Governor-General of the Sudan, Sir Lee Stack. With this proclamation under reference went martial law, which law or measure proved not alone a menace to Egypt but a costly experience for the British who supported it. Fresh courage was in evidence upon the part of the King, when the protectorate, which had obtained for a period of eight years, was abolished, following the proclamation mentioned, when His Majesty exclaimed: The attainment of our national independence is the fruit which we have constantly encouraged and supported." And then, again, this declaration from him upon his accession to the throne: "We take God and our peo-

ple to witness our unshakable desire to continue to consecrate to the prosperity of our country and the happiness of our beloved people all our strength and devotion."

An outstanding objective evidence showing His Majesty's friendly, appreciative spirit toward America, was evidenced in the laying of the cornerstone of the auditorium building of the American University in 1927, when the chief of the King's cabinet, Nessime Pasha, representing His Majesty, came at the appointed hour and laid the cornerstone for this building.

The fraternizing spirit manifested by the student body of these two universities in their athletic games, and their attendance of lectures given at the universities at frequent intervals, augurs well for the future of the young men of Egypt.

I have at some length now referred to the work and accomplishments of His Majesty, King Fuad, in the matter of education, material interests, etc. I feel that I should not leave the subject of his activities in the interest of his people without reciting that England, with her allies, had the hearty cooperation of His Majesty, then Sultan, during the progress of the World War, notwithstanding the fact that in giving such support he was fighting against the people of his own religion, the Mohammedans of the Turkish Empire. This was done, however, as in the case of India, Mesopotamia, Syria, and Hejaz (Arabia), with the full understanding that these countries were to have their independence.

In the case of the Hejaz government (King Hussein on the throne) England had entered into a written agreement with the King whereby his country, with additional territory, was to be independent. It is of interest, however, in this connection to state that instead of King Hussein

being upon his throne, governing an independent country, he is now a prisoner of England on the island of Cyprus. India is still battling for her rights, and Mesopotamia is now under the mandate of England. In spite of the fact that she has declared Egypt a Sovereign, Independent State, England still has her High Commissioner there who dominates the country.

Egypt had had already thirty-two years of British domination and was then smarting under British rule, during which time, without a doubt, the Egyptians had experienced many political deceptions, and it was not until after they were made to believe that they would be given their independence did they join whole-heartedly, numerically, and materially with England and their allies against the Central Powers.

The armistice signed, the Egyptians had a perfect right to expect a fulfillment of the solemn obligation made to them by the British with respect to independence. I shall not recite all of the Herculean efforts of the King to regain for his country the political rights which were lost by her on July 11, 1882, by reason of the naval onslaught which was made upon the Egyptian army by British gunboats, under command of Admiral Beauchamp Seymour, supported, of course, by the British Admiralty, while the former—the Egyptian army—was defending her forts against foreign invasion. This incipient, sanguinary conflict for the control of Egyptian affairs precipitated by the British in Egyptian waters at Alexandria was completed at Tel-el-Kebir by an invading British army which was victorious over the Egyptian forces led by Arabi Pasha. Much has been written by historians and paid correspondents—British and otherwise—to defend this invasion of Egyptian territory by the British, but it is, in the interest



of justice and fair play, refreshing to read the account of this high-handed political procedure upon the part of the British by such able and unbiased men as Wilfrid Scarven Blunt and Francis Adams, heretofore mentioned. (Blunt's "Secret History of the English Occupation of Egypt" and "The New Egypt", by Francis Adams.)

The history of this invasion is indeed surrounded by many historical events which very much complicate the real situation as viewed from the two chief combatants. I was about to say three combatants, for when the matter of military interference in Egyptian affairs was first discussed, France, led by her then Prime Minister, Gambetta, was for a coalition of the forces of England and France against Egypt, in order that a more aggressive policy might be pursued in Tunis, where France had, as alleged by her, interfered in the affairs of that country in the interest of "good government", proclaiming at the same time that as soon as the "insurrection" was put down they would evacuate, and that they had no intention of remaining there permanently.

Now, however, since it was a "fait accompli"—that is, they, the French, were already in possession of the territory, he—Gambetta—proposed to hold it. Apropos of this situation, Blunt, in his book above mentioned, relates the following interesting story which took place in the spring of 1882, when agitation for military interference in the affairs of Egypt were strong: "On my way to Egypt," he says, "an incident occurred which I shall have to return to when its full importance comes to be considered. At Charing Cross Station I found Dilke and his private secretary, Austin Lee, on their way, as I was, to Paris, and I made the whole journey in their company. Dilke that day was in the highest possible spirits. His

intimate friend, Gambetta, had on November 15 succeeded St. Hilaire as French Prime Minister; and Dilke, who had been for the last six months the English Commissioner at Paris for the negotiation of a renewal of the Commercial Treaty with France without having succeeded in concluding it, was now returning to his work, confident that with the change at the Quai d'Orsay he should no longer have any difficulty. Gambetta, on his side, had a plan of his own in which Dilke, as under secretary at the foreign office could be of the greatest use to him. St. Hilaire had made a terrible mess of the Tunis invasion and had left all north Africa in a blaze for his successor to deal with. Gambetta had come into office determined to use strong measures, and, as they say, to 'grasp the nettle' with both hands. He was filled with apprehension of a general Pan-Islamic uprising, and saw in the national movement at Cairo only a new and dangerous manifestation of Moslem 'fanaticism'. He was closely connected, he adds, through his Jewish origin, with the great financial interests involved in Egypt, and had made up his mind to better St. Hilaire's halting aggression on Tunis by forcing on intervention also in Egypt. In this he wanted our government to go with him and join in an anti-Islamic crusade in the name of civilization, and as a first measure, to strengthen the hold of European joint control at Cairo. On both these matters, the commercial treaty and Egypt, Dilke was most communicative, though he did not "put all the dots upon the i's," treating the former as a special English interest and the latter as specially a French one. It was a point of party honor with the Liberal government, which was essentially a free-trade government, to show the world that their free-trade declarations did not prevent them from getting reciprocity

from other nations, or favorable commercial terms from protectionist governments, and Dilke knew that it would be a feather in his cap if he could obtain a renewal of the French concessions. So eager, indeed," Blunt continues, "was he about it that I distinctly remember saying to myself, half aloud, as we parted at the Gare du Nord: 'That man means to sell Egypt for his commercial treaty.'"

And then he, Blunt, adds: "Nor did the event prove it otherwise than exactly a true prophecy. It will be seen" he goes on, "that to the trivial advantage of obtaining certain small reductions of the import duties levied on English goods in France, the whole issue of liberty in Egypt, and to a large extent of Mohammedan reform throughout the world, was sacrificed by our Liberal government." This is a terrible indictment against a "Christian" government by one of its subjects, but his judgment is well supported by the facts, as they have been developed from time to time.

The Right Honorable John Bright, M.P., a member of Mr. Gladstone's cabinet, and one of the ablest of British statesmen, resigned his seat in the cabinet when he found that Joseph Chamberlain and other members of this same cabinet, president of Board of Trade, and other pro-war leaders, were forcing the unwilling hand of the Prime Minister into war with Egypt, in the interest of the money-lenders of Europe.

Bright is quoted by Blunt in his book, page 374, as saying: "He considers the bombardments a breach of international law and the moral law." Blunt further relates on the same page that while at a dinner party given by one Mrs. Howard, at which she had as her guests Harrington, Granville, the Senile Foreign Minister, and Bright, the latter told Mrs. Howard that while he was at

the cabinet which decided on bombardment of Alexandria, Lord Granville, the Minister of Foreign Affairs, had assured him it would not really take place, and that it had long ago been settled that he was to leave the cabinet on the first shot fired in any war, and added that it had been a cause of grief and tears to him to watch the slaughter which had since occurred.

One's mind, naturally I think, reverts to the experiences of Peter after the betrayal of his Master, when contemplating this experience of the conscience-stricken Bright. Would that the world possessed more Brights, and that they were at the head of governments which contemplate the usurpation of authority and domination of other governments and people.

It is of interest to note that about the time the government of Gladstone was being urged to militarily enter into the affairs of Egypt, when Egypt had just launched out for the first time under a constitutional form of government, trouble—serious trouble—was brewing in Ireland and in Gladstone's cabinet, by members of an Irish secret society known as the "Invincibles". Gladstone's policy in Ireland had been one of conciliation, and those in his cabinet opposed to this policy now urged that radical measures be pursued. Chief among those who desired an abandonment of the conciliation methods in dealing with the Irish nationalists was Lord Harrington, brother of Lord Cavendish, who was assassinated. Indeed, the majority of the Gladstone cabinet was now against him in his liberal ideas as they related both to Ireland and Egypt.

Trevelyan was given the place in Dublin made vacant by the death of Cavendish, and a policy of coercion was to be pursued. Blunt is responsible for the statement

that this line of policy of coercion or force was decided on by the cabinet at the same time—at a meeting held by it in the second week of May, 1882.

When referring to Gladstone, Chamberlain is credited with the statement made after the cabinet meeting at the time just mentioned, "We have the 'grand old man' in a corner now, and he must fight." Harrington is alleged to have made the statement to Lascelles at this time, that they "intend occupying Egypt and probably annexing it, on the principle 'J'y suis, J'y reste'." (I am, I stay). It is little wonder, after these facts became known to the French, that the policy agreed upon between Gambetta and Dilke, above mentioned, was overthrown by the French by substituting M. de Freyeinet as Prime Minister instead of Gambetta, who refused to be a party to the bombardment of Alexandria or in any way entering into military alliance with the English against the Egyptian government and its people.

It is interesting in this connection, when the British thus took military invasion of Egypt into their own hands, opposed as they were by the majority of the countries of Europe, and especially Austria, to review somewhat the declarations of assurances upon the part of the British with respect to this tragic and most sanguinary act. Sir Charles Dilke who, it will be recalled, supported the project of those of his own government who favored military interference in Egypt, that he might thus be enabled to secure a favorable commercial treaty with the French, through Gambetta, her Prime Minister, who desired thereby to strengthen the French position in Tunis by raising the question of Pan-Islamic uprising, now has, after a period of ten years of English occupancy, a change of heart.

We hear him saying in a speech in Parliament at this time, when referring to this question, as reported in the "London Times" and quoted in "The New Egypt", by Francis Adams, pages 270 and 271: "It was not necessary to go fully into the circumstances of the military occupation, because the present occupation did not rest upon, was not a necessary consequence of the military occupation. The present state of things," he continues, "had grown out of things which followed the military intervention and not out of the military intervention itself. We might have come away immediately afterwards, or six months afterwards, when Sir Evelyn Wood reported that Egypt was fit to stand alone. Our remaining was contrary to the permanent policy of this country, to all declarations as to the interests of this country which had been made by our statesmen. Lord Salisbury has used the argument that our remaining there would be contrary to our distinct promises to Europe at the time we went. These promises were distinct and clear. We said that we went to support the authority of the khedive and to suppress a military revolt. We said that we were acting in support of the khedive against rebels; and we told our officers to make it plain that we had not taken possession ourselves. We told the Canal Company we were going at the instance and on the part of the Khedive. On landing, we issued a proclamation stating that we did so 'in the interests of your Khedive, your lawful ruler'."

Thirty years and more have elapsed (a generation) since these words were spoken, and the British are still in Egypt usurping authority—still in this now "Independent and Sovereign State." Well, ask any well-informed European or Egyptian official as to whether there is or is not a British High Commissioner in Egypt, who runs rough

shod, as an imperial autocratic dictator over the wishes of the Egyptian government, even to the smallest internal affairs of the government.

## CHAPTER XV

### COL. LAWRENCE IN ARABIA—UNFULFILLED PROMISES OF THE BRITISH—CROMER'S WORK IN EGYPT COMPARED WITH THAT OF GENERAL WOOD IN CUBA.

ALL who have read the splendid book, "Lawrence in Arabia," are familiar with the remarkable work done by him, with the aid of King Hussein and his three able boys, Prince Ali, Abdullah, and Feisal.

With further reference as to British promises to King Hussein, I quote the following editorial from the Cleveland "Plain Dealer", under date of December 3, 1927, under the caption "Fed With False Hopes":

"Towards the close of the late war the name of Lawrence resounded through the English-speaking world as that of one of the major heroes of the conflict. Lawrence was a colonel in the British army, but his importance was incomparably greater than that of any other British colonel. Lawrence—Colonel T. E. Lawrence—was the man who organized the Arabs into an effective army which contributed a vital share to the defeat of the Turks and the bringing of peace throughout the world.

"And, the war having been ended, and peace proclaimed, Lawrence was summoned by King George and offered great honors, which he refused to accept—refused and declined without apology. He told the King that he considered the part he had played in the war as dishonorable to himself, to his country, and to his King.



He had given promises to the Arabs which had been authorized by his government, and since the coming of peace these promises had been ignored. Instead of being established as an independent state, the Arabs found themselves parceled out under various mandates, mostly as British property, but partly as French. From a government which would thus disregard its promises, Lawrence, friend of the Arabs, would accept no honors.

"It is all told in a book recently published in London. No one in official position has arisen to deny the truth of all that is said. As for Lawrence himself, the man who aided so greatly in winning the war, he is now an obscure aviator in India. He has never ceased to feel that his own honor as well as that of his country has been smirched.

"It is, though, the old way, big promises in time of need, and small fulfillment when the peril is past.

"The Arabian nation today is nothing. The Hedjaz is the prey of a robber sheik. Feisal, generous and valiant son of the King, who was Britain's stalwart friend in the hour of darkest danger, is a mere dependent, a puppet king of a mandated region, while Lawrence is flying in India, trying to forget."

I often thought while in Egypt, and have since as well, of the marked difference in conduct which the United States government has all along manifested towards the Cuban and Philippine people over that shown by the British towards the Egyptian nation and people. And not alone towards them, but towards Spain as well, with whom we had the war which lost to them the islands mentioned.

It will be recalled that we stated, after the defeat of Spain by us, that these people in due course of time should have their independence, and we immediately started in to make this very thing possible.

We found the Cuban people in desperate financial straits, their buildings had been burned, their crops of every kind destroyed, and starvation, sickness, and insantiation prevailed everywhere. We provided them with places of habitation; we furnished them with food, clothes, agricultural implements, seed for their crops—indeed, everything was furnished by us to rehabilitate their homes and farms. We continued to occupy their country with the late Major General Leonard Wood in command, until we could establish order and set them on the road to prosperity and independence. This we did, and then, true to our promise, or declaration made to them after the war, we left them, clothed and protected as a Sovereign and Independent State. I have here used the word “protected; how we have thrown around them our mighty arm of protection has been fully told in a previous chapter.

The work accomplished by this mighty man of valor for these Cuban people, who had for years been under both the civil and military heel of tyrants, when placed along side of the accomplishments of other men who have been selected for like posts, is so far in advance of the latter as to hardly admit of comparison. How, for instance, do improved sanitation, eradication of diseases, provision for those in physical distress, the construction of good highways, educational advantages provided for the children of this then destitute people, compare with the work of Cromer in Egypt, or the work of the little recently-made “Lord” Lloyd, who is the present High Commissioner of the Independent Sovereign State of Egypt?

This imperialist and autocrat, who has for his criterion Lord Cromer, but who is universally admitted, I think, in every way inferior to him except in the matter of egotism, does not consider it in keeping with his dignity

to even present a letter of credence to the Egyptian Sovereign, but conducts himself in a manner like that of a ruler in his own country. I shall have more to say of his presence in Egypt and his administration later on. Before I leave the subject of Cuba, which subject I have brought forward as one of comparison, I wish to state that after the Spanish-American War was closed, and it was found that Spain had lost the possessions mentioned heretofore, we not alone rehabilitated these waste lands, clothed and fed the people of them, but gave to Spain a present of twenty million dollars, that she might with this sum stabilize her own tottering financial situation. Let us see how this act of clemency towards a weak nation upon the part of a strong one compares with the ultimatum issued to the Egyptian government by the British after the assassination of Sir Lee Stack, in November, 1924, when, upon the *assumption* that the government of Egypt "was either directly or indirectly" connected with the murder of this British and Egyptian official, (for he was Sirdar of the Egyptian army, as well as the Governor-General of the Sudan) she (Britain) demanded and received of the Egyptian government five hundred pounds Sterling (\$2,500,000) in cash and a complete surrender (for that in reality is what it amounts to) of all her interests in the Sudan. (See the full text of the ultimatum with all the correspondence relating thereto, in another chapter.) It is very important, however, in this connection, to observe that while the most superlative efforts were put forth by the British to so connect the government with this crime during the trial of the criminals, not a single spot or stain was to be found upon their official escutcheons. The criminals were all, seven in number, brought to bay, tried, convicted, and hanged.

And it is further important, and of interest, to state that the government charged with this crime was responsible for the offering and the payment of fifty thousand dollars for the arrest of these villains. Since the government of Egypt has proved, beyond a question of doubt, that it was neither directly, indirectly, or in any other way, form or manner connected with this crime, has the \$2,500,000 that was taken from them by the British government, upon this false hypothesis, been returned to Egypt? Not a dollar of it has been returned, and, in my judgment, never will be. Have, then, the British, since their charge against the government of Egypt has been found to be without truth, made amends for their usurping, at the time of the ultimatum, all authority over the government and general interest in the Sudan? They have not, and, in my judgment, never intend to.

Compare the British action over the assassination of Sir Lee Stack, if you please, with the action of our government over the brutal killing of our Vice-Consul, Imbrie, in Persia. Shall we briefly review our demands made upon the government of Persia in this case: (1) a suitable apology to our government; (2) the arrest, trial and conviction of the assassins; (3) their execution; (4) payment to Mrs. Imbrie, the widow, the sum of \$60,000; (5) payment of the expense of sending a warship to Persia to convey the remains of the Vice-Consul to America. All this was agreed to and complied with by the Persian government. When the Persian authorities notified us that the last requirement made by us had been fulfilled, and that the \$100,000, the cost of the warship, was in a bank subject to our order, we in turn notified the Persian government that we desired that this sum be invested by it, and the proceeds resulting there-

from be used to teach the young men of Persia that murder is wrong.

The war for the Allies was won, the armistice was signed, the division of land and peoples was made at Versailles by the Powers, and Egypt was still left under British domination. This situation thus created was, as indicated, most critical. The British government and her Parliament were by no means a unit in maintaining the view that Egypt's rights should be longer trespassed upon by them, and out of all this agitation came the Milner Commission which the Sultan, in spite of his Egyptian advisors, turned to good account. Hussein Rushdi Pasha was, during this period and at the time the armistice was signed, president of the Council of Ministers, and when it came to his notice that the British, in spite of their pre-war promises in the matter of Egyptian independence, were going to hold Egypt under their continued authority, demanded at once from the British foreign office, through the High Commissioner, Sir Reginald Wingate, that he be received in London, with his colleague, Adly Yeghen Pasha, to negotiate with the British government with a view to obtaining for his country that which had been promised by the British officials at the outset of the war in event of the success of the Allies—independence. Under the seeming pretext of being unable to agree among themselves as to the means practicable for a solution, or even a discussion of this question, the British cabinet refused the request.

But the indomitable spirit of the whole country of fourteen million people refused to accept this decision of the British government without further effort being made. That they were entitled to be relieved of foreign rule and domination they well understood; that they had been

promised this relief was still fresh in their memories. Three of the most talented, influential, and patriotic men of the nation, in the persons of Saiad Zaghloul Pasha, Ali Shaarawi Pasha, and Abdul Aziz Fahmi Bey, president and members of the Egyptian delegation respectively, were made a committee at this time to review their request and press their claims for independence.

It followed, in a measure, the same lines of procedure as those observed by the late Rushdi Pasha and his colleague, Adly Pasha, in their endeavor to secure the same relief; that is, they made their application for a conference with the British government through the British High Commissioner in Egypt, but when they presented their claim, on November 13, 1915, they did so in person, and made it plain in their arguments that Egypt demanded and was determined to have her moral and legal rights, and that nothing short of a fair deal, which would secure independence, would satisfy the country. In due course this second plea for a conference was denied by the British, which was followed by the resignation of the Prime Minister of Egypt, Rushdi Pasha, the first of the following month, December, but same was not accepted by His Highness the Sultan until March 1, 1919.

The Egyptian people, from the highest official to the peasant on the street, felt that a great injustice had been done them, and from what transpired immediately after this time it would appear that the English likewise felt that turning a deaf ear to these entreaties was not in harmony with justice of British pre-war promises. Demand for justice upon the part of the Egyptians continued, and within nine days (to be exact, March 9, 1919), after the resignation of the Prime Minister, as noted above, came the arrest and deportation of the "Grand Old Man" of

Egypt, Zaghoul Pasha, and three of his friends and associates, to the Island of Malta. This action upon the part of the British stirred the people of Egypt from Aswan to Alexandria, and violent and unprecedented disturbances at once were precipitated. This outbreak of violence, however, was not shared in by those in authority of the Egyptian government, but by those who knew not otherwise how to show their displeasure. It is of interest, however, in this connection to state, that if a rather marked sympathy was shown by the Egyptian government at this time in its countenancing a general strike of officials and placing a ban on English goods, such an attitude did not surpass the activities of the American colonists during the days of our revolt against the tyranny of George III.

The Sultan, during all this disturbance, kept a clear head and was able to give to his people such counsel and advice as soon quelled, somewhat at least, the storm. However, there was not great abatement of the agitation until on April 7, 1919, less than a month after the arrest and deportation of Zaghoul Pasha and his friends, when the Sultan intervened with the British High Commissioner, Lord Allenby, and was successful in having these men mentioned, released from their imprisonment at Malta.

The storm for the time was over, and the splendidly intentioned British High Commissioner lost heavily in prestige both in Egypt, and as will be shown later, with his own government as well. Following the release of these prisoners interned at Malta the strike ended, and internal peace was restored for the time. A new cabinet was now formed and concession was made by the British, upon demand of a new government, that all prosecutions in connection with the disturbances incident to the strike

should be decided by the civil courts, and also that all sentences heretofore pronounced under military law be likewise reviewed by the civil courts.

The feeling in England, at least among many in authority, was that some definite favorable consideration must be given the demands of the Egyptian government and people, and the Milner Mission was the result.

While the government of Egypt, headed by Mohammed Saïad Pasha, refused to countenance this Mission, His Highness the Sultan, I think, turned it, as heretofore indicated, to rather good account. In the report of Milner to his government on this Mission, we find the following passage: "In fact, even while in Egypt, we have already perceived that all the Egyptians—the Sultan and his Ministers included—though they might be divided on other points, were all united in the same desire to have their country diplomatically represented abroad. It had been a source of pain for all of them that, when we declared the protectorate, we should have dispensed with the Egyptian Minister of Foreign Affairs, and that we should have placed in the hands of the High Commissioner the Department of Foreign Affairs with which it had been found impossible to carry on. It was universally hoped that, when the time should come for a definite settlement of the relations between England and Egypt, we should allow the Ministry of Foreign Affairs again to have an Egyptian at its head and the representatives of foreign countries to be, as in the past, directly accredited to the Sovereign of Egypt."

From this and various other points in the Milner report may be seen the influence of the Sultan and his advisors. Too, the influence of this report and the contention of the Egyptians for a fair deal were seen when, in



March, 1921, the British government appreciating that the protectorate no longer formed a satisfactory relation in which Egypt should continue to remain with respect to the government of Britain, invited the Sultan to appoint an official delegation with a view to negotiating an agreement which, while securing the special interest of the British government and enabling her to offer satisfactory guarantees to Foreign Powers, might conform with the aspirations of Egypt and the Egyptian people.

As a further evidence of the Sultan's influence in securing a better understanding with the English at the time of, or just after, the meeting of the Milner Commission, I find in a letter which Lord Allenby addressed to His Highness the Sultan, apropos of this conference in question, the following note: "Your Highness: I have not failed to bring to the knowledge of His Majesty's government the opinion several times expressed by Your Highness as to the necessity for the government to arrive at a decision of the subject of the recommendations of Lord Milner which should conform with the aspirations of Egypt and the Egyptian people, aspirations towards which the sympathetic views of Your Highness also are well known."

There can be no question but what this honorable, usually fair-minded British representative in Egypt, Lord Allenby, was thoroughly convinced at this time, as he was when he went to London in the early part of 1922, when his mission was that of appealing to the then Prime Minister, Lloyd George, and his imperialistic secretary, Lord Curzon, that Egypt should have her independence. This was fully evidenced by his telegram to Lady Allenby from London in the early days of February, 1922, which read, when referring to his mission: "I return victorious." One

does not obtain a victory without a contest, and if it should be a victory changing almost the whole political complexion of a nation, it is a victory particularly worthy of note. Indeed, it was so vital to the interests of Egypt, as to lead the incoming Prince and Foreign Minister, Abdel Khalek Sarwat Pasha, in his speech at Cairo, April 2, 1922, to declare, that it was "an act which would operate as the chief corner stone in the democratic regime in this country", and which in the Rescript of March 15, 1922, had His Majesty to declare: There springs the fruit of the national effort which we have constantly encouraged and supported.

It is to be noted in this connection, that three months previously the British government declared the situation between the two governments, as it obtained before the declaration of February 28, 1922, referred to above, as "unchangeably fixed". It will thus be seen that the degree of independence which was finally given at this time was grudgingly granted in so far as the British government was concerned. I think it may truthfully and correctly be stated that the fervent demands of the Egyptian people, supported as they were by His Highness the Sultan, fully convinced Lord Allenby, the High Commissioner, and Sir Maurice Amos, the British judicial advisor, that nothing short of such action upon the part of Britain would bring peace, and so the British government finally, but reluctantly, yielded to the presentation of the facts by these two British officials; not, however, until there was another political upheaval almost equal to the one to which reference has been made, which occurred in 1919. This happened the latter part of December, 1921, the month of my arrival in Egypt, when Saiad Zaghloul

Pasha and six of his colleagues were again arrested. As before, at the instance of the High Commissioner, for refusing to obey an order of this official in respect to holding political meetings where discussions were carried on as to independence, they were deported, first to the Island of Ceylon, and later to Gibraltar.

Agitation over this alleged unwarranted imperial action continued, and I think it was the consensus of opinion, not only of all Egyptians but of the great majority of Europeans as well, that a great blunder had been made. No Egyptian at this time could be found to assume the reins of government, and the leaders declared that no move along this line would be made by them until a more liberal policy towards their country and countrymen was shown by England.

Lord Allenby left Egypt for London on the morning of February 3, after the arrest and deportation, six weeks before, of Zaghloul Pasha and his colleagues, to take up with his government future relations with Egypt. On February 23, came the famous telegram: "I return victorious", to which I have already referred.

It was then currently believed that the "victory" of Allenby would carry with it the abandonment of the protectorate; the removal of British military troops to points remote from centers of population, where their presence had been a red flag in the face of the Egyptian people for forty years, or to sites better adapted to the protection of "British interests"; and the change of the official title of High Commissioner be made that of Diplomatic Agent and Consul-General or Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary. However, only the abandonment of the protectorate was realized. The British military troops continued to be kept in the centers of population and the

title of High Commissioner continued to be held. The declarations made by the British, however, relieved the tension much and permitted the formation of a cabinet with Sarwat Pasha as Prime and Foreign Minister.

In this connection, as evidencing the deep-seated appreciation of King Fuad towards Lord Allenby for his masterful stroke in bringing about the independence of Egypt, as well as showing the character of the King himself, I wish to quote from an interview in the "Paris Figaro", by this paper's special correspondent, M. Raymond Recouly with His Majesty King Fuad.

"I had had occasion to meet him," he writes, "several times in Paris in former days.

"A man vigorous and robust, in the prime of life (he is fifty-four, but is far from looking it), giving before all an impression of a tranquil energy, confident, and sure of itself. An open and prepossessing physiognomy, a frank, straight look, the gift of penetrating at once the most delicate questions and expressing himself directly upon them without circumlocution or reticence."

The interviewer recalls briefly His Majesty's career, his studies in Geneva and in Italy, and his work in Egypt for the propagation of science and education.

To M. Recouly the King said:

"Events called me to a power for which I had no ambition. You know the circumstances in which I ascended the throne; it was October, 1917, at a particularly difficult turn of the war, when the issue, one might say, was still undecided. The defection of Russia had just taken place in the East and Rumania had half fallen out. For me, personally, the issue of the conflict was not in the least doubtful. Having lived a long time in Europe, knowing by direct observation that nothing could replace the re-

sources, the spirit, the moral and material situation of all the belligerent nations, I was always convinced of the final victory of the Allies. I knew that they had on their side not only the right, but might; but it was not everyone, particularly in the East where we were far from the theatre of hostilities, who thought or could think as I did. It was under these conditions that I accepted the heavy responsibility of power."

Later, referring to the present situation, His Majesty said: "I am happy and proud to be the first sovereign of an independent Egypt, and the great majority of my people, you may be sure, share this contentment.

"You will perhaps hear, here and there, reservations, criticisms, even protests. Do not be unduly impressed by them. Is it not the first effect of public liberty to create an opposition?

"We have lived through, and are living in, unique and moving times. My country is called upon to show the world whether it is, or not, worthy of the liberty it has recovered and in a state to direct its own destinies. I am convinced that it will be able to respond in a manner that will satisfy the most exacting.

"We have a particularly hard task to accomplish. I intend to guard against any precipitation and every improvisation of which the consequences might be irreparable.

"The government has just nominated, as you know, a high commission, charged with drawing up a project for the constitution. This commission has already set to work. I, who have lived so long in Europe, rejoice that the hour has come to give my people a constitutional regime analogous to those of other liberal nations. Furthermore, this regime is not, as might be thought, in contradiction with the veritable spirit of Islamic traditions.

"In the gesture that England has just made in regard to us, one can never say enough of the immense merit of Marshal Allenby. It is now several years that I have had the pleasure to be in daily touch with him. There has never arisen the slightest difference between us. There you have the honest man, in the full strength of the term—justice and loyalty personified. He examined the situation in Egypt without prejudice or partiality. He formed an opinion for himself. Once it had taken root in him, nothing would make him give it up. He did not fear to take the risk; he threw into the balance, at the opportune moment, the formidable weight of his influence, his personal prestige, and he won his case. His merit, you may be assured, was not slight. There were difficult moments, when it needed great courage and a strength of character by no means common, not to deviate from the line that he had laid down for himself.

"It is a fine thing to see a great soldier whom the war had raised to the very summit of the military hierarchy, covered with glory and honor, give proof of such a political mentality."

Comments the interviewer: "With these words the interview came to a close. I said to myself that it was just as fine to see a sovereign render such a striking tribute to a man who might have been his adversary, yet had only been his friend."



## CHAPTER XVI

### AN INCIDENT SHOWING SPLENDID SPIRIT OF LORD ALLENBY IN CONTRAST TO THAT OF HIS SUCCESSOR—THE FIRST MINISTRY AFTER THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

**A**N incident, tending to show the democratic spirit and magnanimity of Lord Allenby, was clearly demonstrated at an official dinner given by me at the San Stefano Hotel, in Alexandria, in the early fall of 1922, after the independence of Egypt had been declared.

I had invited to this dinner, among other distinguished guests, His Excellency Simeka Pasha, a member of the cabinet, holding the portfolio of Minister of Communication, and Lord Allenby.

When order was given to arrange the place cards at the table it was directed that the Egyptian cabinet minister be given the seat of the ranking guest to the right of the hostess, Mrs. Howell, while Lord Allenby was to be on her immediate left. This breaking of the long established precedent precipitated great subdued excitement in the social circles, and the criticism regarding the matter greatly distressed Mrs. Howell, in spite of the fact that it was, from the standpoint of correct protocol, the proper procedure, since the change in the political status of Egypt now obtained.

Not long after this party, while with the High Commissioner, I mentioned the fact that the seating at the table



on this particular occasion had brought unfavorable criticism upon the part of some of the guests, and that Mrs. Howell had worried no little over the affair, since she feared that he had probably taken umbrage over the matter.

He graciously replied as follows: "Say to Mrs. Howell that the matter was not noticed by me, and that I think I was, in the circumstances, given my correct place at the table; the change in the status of the Egyptian government makes the difference in prestige."

I speak of this incident to show the fair-mindedness of this great man and to bring out the marked difference in this respect between him and his successor, George Lloyd.

The new government with Sarwat Pasha continued to function, in a more or less satisfactory manner, until November 29, 1922, when dissensions arose between the Prime Minister and, it is alleged, the Palace, over certain constitutional provisions. (The constitution was at this time being drafted.) The government, I think, at this time was wholly satisfactory to the British Residency, but it was felt by the Zaghloul element that at least some members of the Sarwat cabinet were very well satisfied to have the great national leader kept at Gibraltar, and while the "stock" of this old patriot was always popular in the political market of Egypt, it did vary from time to time. Just at this particular moment it commenced to advance, and it was felt by those in high Egyptian authority that the popular thing to do was to get rid of all semblance of opposition to the release and return of Zaghloul Pasha and his colleagues in exile. In spite of the changed relations in governmental regime, assassinations and attempted assassinations, both of British subjects, and now and then of Egyptian subjects, continued to occur, when

the following letters were exchanged between the Residency and the Egyptian government. We believe, from the perusal of these letters, the reader will be able to appreciate the fact that the Egyptian government put forth every effort to control all crime.

"Your Excellency:

"I am instructed by his Majesty's government to inform you that they view with increasing concern the frequency and impunity of the outrages of which the latest example is the attempted assassination of Colonel Pigott.

"It rests with the Egyptian government to take severe measures to discover and punish the culprits, and to put a definite stop to this campaign of political crime, and I am instructed to state that, unless this is done, the matter will be regarded by His Majesty's government as one of very great gravity. I am, Sir,

"Your Excellency's obedient servant,

"ALLENBY, F. M.,

"High Commissioner."

"Ramleigh, July 20."

---

(The Reply of the Egyptian Government)

"Your Excellency:

"I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of Your Excellency's letter dated July 20, on the subject of the frequency and impunity with which political crimes have been committed, with special reference to the latest attempt against Colonel Pigott.

"Your Excellency is aware that the Egyptian government did not fail to take, in good time, special measure in this connection in particular by adding to the European personnel in the police so as to permit an increase in the number of patrols. The Egyptian government is the first

to deplore that these measures have neither resulted in the prevention of such crimes nor in the discovery of their perpetrators. I can, however, assure Your Excellency that the Egyptian government, persevering in that line of action with which I acquainted Your Excellency on May 30 last, will continue not to spare any effort to make as effectual as possible the measures taken with a view to the prevention of these crimes and the apprehension of their authors. Further, I would inform Your Excellency that the government has the intention of establishing in the Ministry of the Interior a new department which will concentrate in its hands the investigation and the control of all inquiries in cases of political crime.

“SARWAT,

“President of the Council of Ministers,  
“Minister of Foreign Affairs.”

---

An English newspaper, published in Cairo, made the following comment on the foregoing correspondence:

“The Political Crime Department to be set up at the Ministry of the Interior in accordance with the declaration made by Sarwat Pasha in his letter to Lord Allenby, will shortly start functioning, and an announcement regarding its organization is expected shortly. It is stated that eleven officers of the Egyptian army will be transferred shortly to the Civil Police for attachment to the new department.”

As a further interest touching upon the question of crime, the following letters will be found of interest and will throw added light on this subject:

“Your Excellency:

“In my last letter to Your Excellency, dated August 24, 1922, I expressed to you the general indignation aroused

among the people of this country by the attempts made on the lives of British subjects. I have recently received confirmation of this. All the provincial councils, the representative bodies of the Mudirs, and the municipalities of the various towns, as well as the representatives of the commercial communities of Cairo and Alexandria, have communicated to me resolutions which I feel it my duty to make known to Your Excellency. In each of these regret is expressed, and an appeal is made to the nation to lend its aid to the authorities for the purpose of discovering the identity of the authors of these crimes.

"In associating myself with this unanimous sentiment, I am sure that Your Excellency will see therein a fresh testimony to this peaceful and friendly spirit toward its foreign guests which animates the Egyptian people.

"I have the honor to be, etc.,

"A. SARWAT,

"Prime Minister, Minister for Foreign Affairs."

"Bulkeley, September 20."

---

"Your Excellency:

"I thank you for your letter dated September 20, by which Your Excellency has been good enough to make known to me the resolutions passed by all the provincial councils, and by the municipalities of the town and the notables of Cairo and Alexandria, condemning the attempts on the lives of British subjects.

"I thank Your Excellency for informing me of these expressions of regret and indignation. I do not doubt the friendly and peaceful feelings held by the Egyptian people towards its foreign guests, and I am happy to think that the energetic measures taken by the Egyptian go-

ernment, supported by the public opinion of the country, will put an end to such deplorable attempts.

"I have the honor to be, etc.,

"ALLENBY, F. M.,  
"High Commissioner.

"The Residency, Ramleigh, September 24.

"No. 225—Confidential."

---

There remains no doubt, I think, in the minds of either Egyptians or Europeans (unless it be those of the latter class who desire to make themselves and others think and believe otherwise) than that the various Egyptian governments, from Sarwat's Ministry down to and including that of the late lamented Zaghloul Pasha, have done all within their power to control these assassinations to which we have alluded. It will be recalled, as noted, that it was not alone British who were attacked, but Egyptians as well. Even Zaghloul Pasha himself was shot by a student crank at the railroad station in Cairo in the summer of 1926.

Soon after the correspondence to which reference has been made, there were current reports that there obtained some friction between the Ministry (headed by Sarwat Pasha) and the Palace. These rumors proved to be well founded, for in November following this correspondence we have the resignation of the Prime Minister, as shown in the letter to the King, which we append below with His Majesty's reply to same.

Following is the official text of Sarwat Pasha's letter to the King:

"Your Majesty:

"When Your Majesty deigned to honor me with your high confidence by inviting me to form a Ministry, I was

able, thanks to your benevolent support, to undertake measures with a view to the change in the political status of the country and the abolition of the protectorate. At the moment when the success of these efforts, which were supported by Your Majesty's unceasing solicitude, could be announced, I had the honor to be officially entrusted by Your Majesty with forming the Ministry, which had the most auspicious of preludes in the proclamation of Your Majesty of the independence of Egypt. This independence, subsequently recognized by the Powers, permitted Egypt to take her place among the free and independent countries. It was possible to establish sovereignty on a durable basis.

"I owed it, in these circumstances, both to Your Majesty and to the country, to point out the guiding motives that I should adopt with a view to the realization of national aspirations. For this reason, I submitted to Your Majesty, in reply to the Rescript addressed to me, the declaration of the Ministry as to the policy it intended to follow. In the foremost rank of these guiding motives the Ministry promised, in execution of Your Majesty's will, to put under consideration the drawing up of a constitutional project in accordance with the principles of modern public law, such as permit Parliament to exercise control over the political tasks to be undertaken; the Ministry further promised that it intended to assume undivided control of the government of the country and turn public affairs in a direction indicated uniquely by the national interest; and that finally the Ministry would strive to obtain the suppression of martial law.

"The Ministry derives great satisfaction from the fact that (under Your Majesty's aegis) it has been able to carry out its program. On the one hand the commission

entrusted with drawing up the constitutional project has finished its labors and has presented a project laying down the principles of government that the Ministry would like to see functioning in the country, this project is at the moment under consideration.

"On the other hand, the Ministry has been able to lay the foundation for the direction of the affairs of the country exclusively by its government. The posts of advisors have been suppressed with the exceptions of the Financial and Judicial Advisors; their mission, however, is limited to expressing an opinion and giving advice, except in the case of the former, as regards the public debt. His custom of being present at the meetings of the Council of Ministers has come to an end. Other foreign officials now depend exclusively upon the authority of the Egyptian Minister, and when they leave the service they are replaced by Egyptians. With a view of cultivating capacities and abilities which we lack, missions have been sent to Europe, whose members may in the future be appointed to posts requiring technical knowledge.

"Finally, as regards the abolition of martial law, the Ministry is happy to submit to Your Majesty that the Bill of Indemnity, which is the condition of such abolition, having been drawn up as between the Egyptian and British governments, it merely remains for Your Majesty's government to accomplish the said abolition.

"During my ministry, changes having come about in the Near East necessitating the revision of the Sevres Treaty. The Egyptian government hastens to ask the interested Powers to invite it to take part in the Lausanne Conference, so that nothing affecting Egypt might be decided without Egypt's voice being heard. The Ministry has submitted to Your Majesty its program regarding the

revision of the dispositions in the said treaty which affects us, with a view to ensuring for the country the realization of its aspirations.

"I should have wished to carry on with my colleagues the execution of my program in its entirety, but I consider it preferable to leave this charge to others.

"I have the honor to present my resignation to Your Majesty, and beg you to be good enough to accept my grateful homage for the benevolent support that I have had from you.

"I pray the Almighty to guide the country in the best road and to grant our prayers for its well-being and prosperity under the aegis of Your Majesty.

"I remain Your Majesty's very humble, most obedient and most devoted servant,

"SARWAT."

"Cairo, November 29, 1922."

---

(King's Letter to Sarwat Pasha)

Following is the text of the Royal Rescript (November 30, 1922) conveying acceptance of the resignation of His Excellency Abdel Khalek Sarwat Pasha:

"My dear Sarwat Pasha:

"We have taken note of Your Excellency's letter dated November 29, 1922, wherein you resign from your office.

"Consequently, we address to you the present Rescript, thanking you, the Ministers, and your colleagues for the services that you have been able to render during the accomplishment of your task.

"FUAD."

"Given at Abdin Palace, November 9, 1922."





## CHAPTER XVII

### DIFFICULTIES ENCOUNTERED IN DRAFTING THE CONSTITUTION—SECOND BANISH- MENT OF ZAGHLOUL PASHA— MIN- ISTRY OF IBRAHIM PASHA AND ITS ACCOMPLISHMENTS.

IT is worthy of note to say that there obtained no little trouble when the constitution was being drafted over the title of the King. As originally drafted, Article 61 declared that the title of the King should be "King of Egypt and the Sudan." Article 62, "The King embodies the Supreme Authority of the Nation, which authority cannot be discussed."

But it was very much discussed by the British. Under date of August 15, 1922, the Dustour Commission gave out the following Sudan Status, Article 119, General Laws:

"The Constitution shall operate in all parts of the Kingdom of Egypt, except the Sudan. Notwithstanding that the latter country is a part of Egypt, and under the sovereignty of Egypt and suzerainty of the King of Egypt, its status will be defined in a special law which will be issued."

While discussion arose from time to time as to various stipulations in the constitution, the most formidable of which were the provisions or articles mentioned which had to do with the title of the King, it was thought that the Residency and the Commission would be able to ad-

just all differences. The Nessim Ministry had just succeeded the Ministry of Sarwat Pasha. While matters were now apparently proceeding in a satisfactory manner, all at once came an ultimatum from the London Foreign Office wherein it was found that the Egyptian government was given a period of twenty-four hours to eliminate these articles, 61 and 62. The situation thus created was so critical, and the responsibility so great, that the Ministry, although in office less than two months, resigned. The ultimatum in question, to add insult to injury, was delivered to the King, instead of to his government. This official action, it was alleged, was without precedent. But it must be remembered that a people under military law, surrounded by a land and air force numbering more than twenty thousand soldiers, camped, as they are, about all executive offices, the capitol, and even the King's palace, are rendered militarily impotent to resist such impositions.

On March 15, 1923, a new Ministry was formed by His Excellency Ibrahim Pasha, under whose government the Act of Indemnity demanded by England was passed, martial law was lifted, the constitution was adopted, the election laws were promulgated, and last but not least, among the other marked happenings during his administration, was the release of Zaghloul Pasha and his colleagues from exile. They were banished (for the second time) at the instigation of the British government, December 22, 1921, on the ground that their presence in Egypt—their home and native country—was inimical to the preservation of good government. They were first sent to Ceylon, then to the Sechellyes Island. Later, owing to the continued ill health of Zaghloul Pasha, he was transferred to that most delightful, cheerful (?) spot, the Rock of Gibraltar. In April, 1923, those who accompanied Zaghloul Pasha in

exile, and were yet held at the Sechellyes Islands, were released and permitted to return to Egypt, while Zaghoul Pasha was granted permission to leave Gibraltar to go wheresoever he pleased except to Egypt.

I may here observe that Lord Allenby, just at this time, was coming in for much scathing criticism both from the press of his own country and the ninety-seven members of the British Parliament, as well as from high Egyptian sources, over his management of Egyptian affairs. It was agreed upon the part of the British that he had made a grave political mistake in championing the cause of Egyptian independence, and finally securing the same. The Egyptian press and people, upon the whole, were most castigating in their writings and speeches against him for what they charged as his imperialistic demands and actions toward those who were contending for the rights of their country. The criticisms of him in Egypt were less severe, however, after the release of Zaghoul Pasha from Gibraltar. But they continued to hammer for his complete release from the custody or surveillance of the British, so that he might return to his family and country. As to this demand Lord Allenby was obdurate. He made the statement that so long as he was High Commissioner in Egypt, Zaghoul Pasha would not be permitted to return to Egypt. From this statement he was forced to capitulate, for not alone, as we shall see, did this national hero return to his home and country, but was destined to be called by his people, immediately after his return, to the highest office within the gift of his King and people.

His triumphant entry into Egypt was made on September 17, 1923, one year and nine months after his last deportation. It was a long time to exile a man more than seventy years old who had been guilty of no crime, unless it be a crime to advocate within the bounds of the law, freedom of his country and people from foreign domination and control. If Zaghloul Pasha and his able patriotic followers were guilty of a crime in the circumstances mentioned, then the American colonists were guilty of a much greater one when they upset the chests of British tea in the Boston harbor, declared against all British imports, and finally declared for independence and poured out their life blood to secure it. No red-blooded American lives today who believes our forefathers made a mistake in fighting for our independence, and Egypt, for equally just reasons, is entitled to be free.

In June, 1923, I left Egypt with my family for the Lebanon Mountains in Syria, to spend a vacation of two months. On the passing of my great and cherished friend, President Harding, in the following August, at San Francisco, when on his return from an official visit to Alaska, I returned to the summer capital, Alexandria, and from the balcony of the Savoy Hotel, where was located the temporary quarters of the Legation I witnessed Zaghloul's reception. Caesar was never greeted with more enthusiasm or by a greater concourse of people. He was driven directly from the landing pier to the country palace of the King, near Alexandria, and during the afternoon of the

same day a reception was given him at the Savoy hotel. On this occasion I had opportunity to both hear and see him, at close range, from the balcony of my apartments, and I could then appreciate the marvelous hold he had upon his people. He was one of the most accomplished and convincing public speakers it has been my privilege to hear.

From this time on he was the cynosure of all eyes. Editorials at this time appeared in various newspapers, both native and foreign, indicating quite clearly, I think, that the result would have been altogether different had the Egyptian leaders, especially Zaghloul Pasha, been treated with the consideration which their intelligence and their genuine patriotic interest in their country justly entitled them.

As touching this matter of lack of consideration upon the part of British officials, both in London and Egypt, I recall a conversation held with the High Commissioner within a month after this distinguished leader, Zaghloul Pasha, had been deported for the second time, when, in answer to my question as to the elements of strength possessed by Zaghloul Pasha, which rendered him such an invincible leader, he replied, as I now recall it, "I have never seen him". In the light of all the trouble and marked disappointments which have come to both of these great and good men, we may properly speculate as to the marked difference which might have obtained had Lord Allenby been disposed to have sent for the national leader and conferred with him over their differences before he demanded his ex-

pulsions from his country.

This imperial attitude upon the part of the British military authorities in Egypt was in evidence much of the time. Here is a concrete example: At an official reception, a tea, held in one of the beautiful parks of Alexandria on one occasion, which was attended by all the officials, both native and British in Egypt, I chanced to be seated at a table by the side of Sir Richard Haking, the General-in-chief of the British forces in Egypt, when I observed that all the members of the Egyptian cabinet were present. Sir Richard replied that he was not acquainted with them. "Not all of them probably," I replied, "but you must know that gentleman near you" (indicating the place at which the person to whom I was alluding was sitting). "No," he said, "who is he?" "The Minister of War," I replied. "I have nothing in common with him", he retorted with a significant, supercilious smile.

We have been talking of Zaghloul's return after his second banishment, of the constitution to be drafted and the election laws to be promulgated, after which an election would be held to elect the first Egyptian Parliament. All this had now been accomplished and Zaghloul Pasha, it was found, absolutely controlled the House of Deputies, having with him 198 of the 211 members.

Zaghloul Pasha, having now an overwhelming majority in both the Senate and the House of Deputies, was asked by His Majesty the King to form a new Ministry. What a political metamorphosis has come to pass! This stalwart leader and patriot, twice banished from his home and country as an arch criminal by British authorities

country, second only to that of King, and with our good Lord Allenby still functioning as High Commissioner! Nor is this all! In the formation of his cabinet, he selected two men to serve with him who had been arrested, tried, and convicted by a military court on a charge of drafting literature inimical to public safety. They had previously been sentenced to pay a fine of five thousand pounds (twenty-five thousand dollars) and to be shot. These men were Jassif Gahli Pasha, the very able son of Boutros Gahli Pasha, a former Prime Minister, and Marcus Hanna Pasha. In this same cabinet were Fathallah Barakat Pasha, his Minister of Agriculture, and Mustapha Pasha el Mahas, his Minister of Communications, who had been deported with Zaghoul Pasha when he was last





exiled. For unadulterated charity and a return of good for evil, I have never seen anything to surpass the conduct of these members of Zaghloul's cabinet.

This was displayed on all public occasions and was the subject of much favorable press comment on the continent.

I shall cite just two of many such instances: After the controversy over the tomb of Tut-ankh-Amen had been precipitated into a decided breach between the Egyptian government and Mr. Carter, and had been settled finally by the Supreme Court in favor of the Egyptian government, the tomb was reopened by the Egyptian government, and it was made the occasion of an official reception held on the site of this tomb, when those who had been invited were conducted into it. Lord Allenby, on this occasion, was offered, and accepted, a special train for himself, Lady Allenby and his staff, while the members of the Diplomatic Corps were given a special train and went *en masse*. The High Commissioner was met, personally, by Marcus Hanna (now a member of the cabinet), whom the High Commissioner, as noted above, had once caused to be arrested and tried by a military court, and was by him conducted into the tomb in a most courteous manner.

The second instance, which to my mind stands out in a most remarkable manner showing the splendid (shall I say Christian?) spirit of these Mohammedan people, was on the occasion of an official reception which was given by the members of Parliament at the Continental Savoy hotel, in Cairo, in April, after the first meeting of Parliament on March 1, 1924. The Senate had for its first president Ahmed Ziwar Pasha, while the House of Deputies had for its presiding officer Ahmed Masloun Pasha. These two officials were to act as hosts upon the occasion.

I was the last member of the Diplomatic Corps to arrive, being unavoidably detained at the Legation. Upon my arrival at the entrance of the lobby I was met by the genial president of the Senate, who said: "We feared you would be unable to get here. We have reserved a place for you at the Prime Minister's table." I found His Excellency Zaghloul Pasha, the Prime Minister, at the head of the table, while to his immediate left sat Lord Allenby, and directly to his right, Lady Allenby. I was given a place between Lady Allenby and the Minister of Foreign Affairs, Wacyf Gahli Pasha, who, as indicated, had, with another member of this present cabinet, after a trial by a military court, been condemned to be shot.

I was amazed at the fine, charitable spirit manifested by these Egyptians upon this as well as upon other occasions. Lord Allenby, I thought, appeared rather ill at ease at receiving such respectful attention from these two really great men, one of whom he had caused unjustly to languish in jail with a sentence of death hanging over his head, and from whom he had exacted the sum of five thousand pounds, which was paid, but never returned. He conversed with the now Prime Minister, whom he had, in his declining years and feeble health, caused to be banished to various unhealthy islands on two different occasions for periods totaling almost two years for no other offense than that of patriotic adherence and strict fidelity to the welfare of his own people and country. Allenby permitted himself to be deceived, and as I believe, miserably erred in judgment as a consequence, with regard to his official treatment of these men. Recalling what he had said to me within a few weeks after the second banishment of Zaghloul Pasha, as to the latter's return to Egypt, I said to him during the course of one of our conversations

shortly after the reception, to which I have above alluded, when some reference was made to it by him: "My Lord, we often hear the proverbial statement that politics make strange bed-fellows, but I think I have never seen a more striking illustration of the truthfulness of it than was exhibited at the Parliamentary reception a few days ago." His Lordship smilingly concurred in my observation.

But the injustice heaped upon the government under the presidency of Zaghloul Pasha had by no means reached its acme. This came most unexpectedly on the afternoon of November 19, 1924. Before going into this awful, memorable affair, I wish to refer to the fact that the first opening of an Egyptian Parliament, perhaps the first in all of her thousands of years of history, started off, in all the circumstances, in a most auspicious manner. The speech from the throne was, in nearly all respects, satisfactory to both the British and the Egyptians. On March 2, 1924, after the opening of the Parliament on the 15th of the same month, I had the honor to address the Minister of Foreign Affairs, Boutros Gahli Pasha, as follows:

"No. 142.

"Excellency:

"I am directed by my government to convey to Your Excellency, and through you to the Prime and other Ministers of the Royal Egyptian government, heartiest congratulations on the occasion of the opening of Parliament under a constitutional form of government, and to wish the nation under the new regime, perpetuity, prosperity and happiness.

"In the above expressions of my government I wish personally and heartily to join.

"I profit by this occasion to renew to Your Excellency

the assurance of my highest consideration and best sentiments.

"J. MORTON HOWELL,  
"American Minister.  
"His Excellency,  
"Wacyf Boutros Gahli Pasha,  
"Ministry for Foreign Affairs, Cairo."

---

"Ministry for Foreign Affairs,  
"Office of the Minister.

"Cairo, March 21, 1924.

"Mr. Minister:

"I have not failed to transmit to the Prime Minister and my colleagues the cordial felicitations which, in the name of the government of the United States, you have so kindly addressed to us on the occasion of the opening of Parliament. The wishes for prosperity and happiness for the Egyptian nation, which you have so eloquently interpreted, have keenly touched us, and we know, moreover, that it is with all your heart, Mr. Minister, that you have participated in these wishes.

"I ask you, Mr. Minister, to forward to the government of the Great Republic, and accept for yourself, the most sincere thanks of the Royal government. We pray God to crown with his benedictions the United States, and to each day strengthen the bonds of great friendship which so happily unite our two countries.

"Kindly accept, Mr. Minister, the assurance of my high consideration.

"Minister for Foreign Affairs,  
"Sig.: WACYF BOUTROS GAHLI.

"His Excellency,

"Dr. J. Morton Howell,

"Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of  
the United States of America."

Now I wish to refer to the great crisis which came, as above noted, so unexpectedly in the early afternoon of November 19, 1924, following the shooting of Sir Lee Stack, Governor-General of the Sudan and Sirdar (Directing General) of the Egyptian army. Sir Lee was returning from his summer vacation in Europe and had stopped over in Cairo, as was his custom on such occasions, to take up military matters in connection with the Egyptian army. He had been at work in the War Office during the forenoon and had, as I now recall it, but shortly left his office in his automobile, and when but a few squares removed from it he was attacked by assassins and so wounded that death resulted after some thirty-six hours. He requested to be taken to the Residency (home of the High Commissioner) but a few squares removed from the place of assault, and diagonally across the street from the American Legation. The news spread with great rapidity. Servants of the Legation at once reported to me the fact that the Governor General had been shot and that he had been taken to the home of the High Commissioner. Within fifteen or twenty minutes after this report reached me I walked across the street to the Residency to ascertain the facts concerning the tragedy, that I might report the same to my government.

I found great excitement prevailing, for not alone had the Sirdar been wounded, but his chauffeur as well, and it was already apparent that the former was fatally injured. On my approach to the house I was met by an Aide-de-Camp, to whom I said, "I have called to gather such facts regarding the murderous assault and its results as are available." He replied that Sir Lee, it was believed, was fatally injured. He then asked if I would like to speak to Lord Allenby. I said I would, if to do so were convenient

to his Lordship. He replied that he would see, and at once returned, stating that Lord Allenby was on the rear porch with Mr. Asquith (the former Prime Minister of England) and would be glad to see me. On reaching him, I was presented to Mr. Asquith. We were all depressed over this awful affair, and Lord Allenby especially was greatly agitated. He remarked that the surgeons were now examining the Governor-General, and he feared that he was fatally wounded. He then observed that Zaghoul Pasha, the Prime Minister, had just called to express his regrets over the atrocious deed, but that he had little time for him, or words to that effect. He concluded his remarks regarding the affair by stating that he wanted to hang all these fellows on a previous occasion and his government would not permit it, meaning, as I thereby thought, that had he been permitted to have had his way at the time to which he referred, this tragedy would not have occurred. Mr. Asquith, as I now recall it, made no comment worthy of note, but seemed very much depressed. Lord Allenby's manner and what he said on this occasion led me to believe that there would be a startling ultimatum to the Egyptian government—especially if the injuries to the Sirdar resulted in his death. My prognosis in this regard, as I have heretofore pointed out, was a correct one. Lord Allenby was both grieved and doubly incensed over this crime; grieved owing to the loss of his long-time friend, and incensed that, since he had used his good offices so recently to secure for the Egyptian people the degree of independence they now enjoyed, to find that they, as he apparently believed at the time, had betrayed his trust and confidence, and again, that his own government gave evidence of disapprovals of his administration. This led him now, undoubtedly, to exert him-

self along lines of extreme demands of the Egyptian government and afterwards brought upon his head censure from the Egyptian government and its people.

It will be recalled that in the ultimatum issued November 22, 1924, by the British to the Zaghoul government immediately following the death of Sir Lee Stack, the Governor-General of the Sudan, and relating to the Sudan, stated that "the area of the land to be irrigated in the Gezira would be increased from 300,000 feddans (acres) to an unlimited figure." The limit fixed had been agreed upon between the two governments at 300,000 feddans, an estimate as high, it was believed, as Egypt could stand without suffering loss of crops from drouth. But now this agreement was to be treated as but a scrap of paper. (It seems to me that term "scrap of paper" is more or less familiar to the people of the entire world.) This declaration brought consternation to the entire native populace of Egypt and was followed by a protest from the Egyptian government and from Zaghoul Pasha. The latter's protest is couched in such plain and unmistakable language, and states the facts so clearly, that I herewith reproduce it, and with it a note to me from the Secretary of the Wafd which are self explanatory:

---

"Cairo, January 30, 1925.

"Excellency:

"I have the honor to bring to the attention of Your Excellency the text of the protest which Egypt, through the organ of the National Party, the Wafd, has today transmitted telegraphically to the Minister for Foreign Affairs at London.

"It will be appreciated if you could see fit to transmit to your government the copy attached.



"In thanking Your Excellency, I beg you to accept the assurance of my high consideration.

"The Secretary of the Wafd,  
"MUSTAPHA EL-NAHAS PASHA."

---

"Cairo, February 6, 1925.

"No. 582.

"The Honorable, The Secretary of State,

"Washington.

"Sir:

"I have the honor, as of possible interest to the Department, to herewith enclose a copy of a letter, with translation, from the Secretary of the Wafd, Mustapha El-Nahas, a former member of the Egyptian cabinet, calling attention to a telegram sent to the Minister of Foreign Affairs at London, signed by Saiad Zaghloul Pasha, recent Prime Minister, protesting against 'the last actions of the British government in the Sudan.' A copy of the telegram in question, with translation, is likewise enclosed, all of which are self-explanatory.

"I have the honor to be, Sir,

"Your obedient servant,

"J. MORTON HOWELL."

---

"Cairo, January 30, 1925.

"The Secretary of the Wafd,

"Mustapha El-Nahas Pasha.

"Mr. Minister:

"In the absence of its Parliament and of a representative government, Egypt, through the medium of its National Party, the Wafd, raises its indignant protest against the British government in the Sudan.



HIS EXCELLENCY MUSTAPHA EL NAHAS PASHA  
Prime Minister of Egypt at the time of the last Political Crisis



"In violation of law and of elementary rules governing normal relations of civilized states, in derogation of a treaty imposed and signed by her and of a formal engagement entered into by her, Great Britain has not hesitated to appropriate to her profit an important part of Egyptian sovereignty over a portion of Egyptian territory.

"She has sent out of the Sudan such part of the Egyptian army as was there, and is engaged now in the mass removal of Egyptian functionaries in the service of the Sudan.

"She has prohibited the Sudanese from appealing in their Friday prayers for the blessing of God upon the legitimate sovereign of the country, His Majesty Fuad I.

"She has created of her sole authority a Sudanese militia destined to the defense of Sudanese territory in giving orders to this militia to give an oath of allegiance to the Governor-General of the Sudan and no longer to His Majesty, our King.

"She has decreed that from henceforth the commissions for nomination, promotion and removal of the officers of the Sudanese army shall emanate from the Governor-General of the Sudan and no longer from His Majesty our King, the Commander-in-Chief of the Army.

"These unique measures which, on the one hand, deprive the Egyptian Monarch of his rights in order to give them to the Governor-General of the Sudan, and which, on the other hand, separate from the Egyptian army the Sudanese units, and which tend to no other end than separating the Sudan from Egypt, cast a sinister shadow upon the British policy in the world.

"Having come into Egypt as a well-wishing tutor in order to there establish order in the finances, England is

now engaged in imposing upon us the evacuation of Sudanese territory.

"Later, with Egyptian blood and gold, and, thanks to the intelligence of the Egyptian officers and functionaries, the Sudan was retaken, and England at that time said that it was Egyptian territory which was returning to the sovereign of the country.

"The Egyptian army, Egyptian finances, and Egyptian labor were largely placed under contribution, and order and prosperity again reigned in the Sudan.

"But when the land was irrigated and cultivated, dams constructed, and the people of the Sudan had become conscious of themselves and proclaimed their attachment to Egypt, Great Britain chases Egyptians from the Sudan and confiscates a country for the reason that it produces cotton, and cotton is indispensable to the manufactures of Manchester!

"Against this hateful policy Egypt appeals to the universal conscience.

"In its name the National Party, the Wafd, declares that Egypt and the Sudan are an indivisible whole.

"That nature, from historical, religious and linguistic considerations, proclaims that Egypt cannot live without the Sudan more than the Sudan can live without Egypt.

"That force cannot sunder that which God has joined together, and that it will not be able to prevail against the will of a people unanimous in their desire to maintain and defend their rights to life and dignity.

"President of the National Wafd,

"Cairo, January 30, 1925."

"SAIAD ZAGHLOUL PASHA.

---

These protests brought a reply from the British government, through Lord Allenby, which clearly indicated that

the length to which the ultimatum went, in this regard, was unreasonable and untenable (this might truly be said of practically all of this document). His reply, made to the president of the Council of Ministers, after his preamble, is couched in the following language: "Inspired by these considerations, and desirous of giving proof of its intentions, the British government is disposed to give instructions to the Sudan government to the effect that the preceding instructions concerning the unlimited development of the Gezira, as mentioned in the note of November 23, are not to be acted on. It is understood that a commission of experts, composed of Mr. J. J. Carter Cramers, president, chosen by the two governments in common accord; Mr. R. M. McGregor, nominated by the British government, and Abdel Hamid Solomon Pasha, the Egyptian delegate, nominated by the Egyptian government, shall meet on February 15, 1925, to study and propose the basis on which irrigation can be effected in taking the interests of Egypt fully into consideration and without prejudicing her natural and historic rights." He, the Commissioner, then adds: "It is also understood that the commission will present its report towards June 30th."

This is quite a capitulation from the position taken in the ultimatum, and it is believed that not alone the protest referred to from the Egyptian government and people brought this "right about face", but the knowledge of the fact that the entire world believed the ultimatum was a most unreasonable and untenable one; particularly did they so regard the irrigation feature of it. This commission was unfortunate in the loss of its president, Mr. Cramers, by death, due to typhoid fever, before its report was completed, and which had not been given out up to the time I left Egypt, in July, 1927. The reader should

not lose sight of the fact that while the declaration as regards Egypt's "natural and historic rights" has been rescinded, none of the Egyptian rights under the original agreement have been mentioned, and unless some unusual force is made to operate, England will continue in absolute control of this vast, fertile country, which originally was the heritage of the Egyptian people.

It should be remembered that Egyptian funds alone have been used in the operation of the Sudan both before and after the day the insurrection was put down, until the ultimatum was issued after the death of the Governor-General in November, 1924. It should further be noted that no part of the \$2,500,000 taken from the Egyptians by this ultimatum has been returned, and, in my judgment, never will be. This imperialistic and unjust attitude of the British cannot but continue to breed the most intense hatred among the people of Egypt and those who share with them the belief that Egypt should have her independence.

## CHAPTER XVIII

### THE ULTIMATUM

IN the foregoing chapters, the ultimatum issued by His Britannic Majesty's High Commissioner in Egypt, Lord Allenby, at the time of the assassination of Sir Lee Stack, Governor-General of the Sudan and Sirdar of the Egyptian army, has frequently been referred to, and the various demands therein made dwelt upon at some length. However, that the reader may not be misled or may not misunderstand the injustice (as I believe) heaped upon the government of Egypt and its people by the British government at the time stated, I herewith append the full texts of all the communications relative to these most drastic and unreasonable demands.

For in so doing, the reader will be the more able to appreciate the enormity of what I shall, for want of a better name, denominate one of the crimes of the ages. Could it be anything less than such, after taking into account, as I have heretofore pointed out, that of these people at least twelve and a half millions of the fourteen millions are illiterate, upon whom, in the last analysis, rests the responsibility of providing nearly all the wealth of the country? They are the farm laborers—"fellah"—working at a wage not exceeding seven piasters a day (thirty-five cents), and forced, by reason of such wage, to live in hovels, surrounded by filth and provided only with water which reeks with pathogenic germs.



It will be recalled that Zaghloul Pasha, at the time of this tragedy, was the Prime Minister, the head of the government, and in this capacity, consequently, the ultimatum was delivered to him. That this murder of the Governor-General of the Sudan was a most dastardly and atrocious deed, condemned by every respector of life, liberty and law, there is no question. But certain it is, that no government could possibly have taken more active, urgent and successful steps to bring the guilty to justice than did the Egyptian government with Zaghloul Pasha as its leading actor, is equally true.

Notwithstanding these facts, the ultimatum, which I shall give in full below, was delivered on the day of the funeral of the Governor-General. The ultimatum and the results speak for themselves. The full texts of all communications relating thereto follow:

“The Residency, Cairo,

“November 22, 1924.

“Sir:

“On behalf of His Britannic Majesty's government I make the following communication to Your Excellency:

“The Governor-General of the Sudan and Sirdar of the Egyptian army, who was also a distinguished officer of the British Army, has been brutally murdered in Cairo.

“His Majesty's government considers that this murder, which holds up Egypt, as at present governed, to the contempt of civilized peoples, is the natural outcome of a campaign of hostility to British rights and British subjects in Egypt and the Sudan, founded upon a heedless ingratitude for the benefits conferred by Great Britain, not discouraged by Your Excellency's government, and fomented by organizations in close contact with that government.

"Your Excellency was warned by His Majesty's government little more than a month ago of the consequences of failing to stop this campaign, more particularly as concerned the Sudan. It has not been stopped. The Egyptian government has now allowed the Governor-General of the Sudan to be murdered, and has proved that it is incapable or unwilling to protect foreign lives.

"His Majesty's government therefore requires that the Egyptian government shall:

"1. Present an ample apology for the crime.

"2. Prosecute the inquiry into the authorship of the crime with the utmost energy and without respect of persons, and bring the criminals, whoever they are and whatever their age, to condign punishment.

"3. Henceforth forbid and vigorously suppress all popular political demonstrations.

"4. Pay forthwith to His Majesty's government a fine of one-half million pounds.

"5. Order within twenty-four hours the withdrawal from the Sudan of all Egyptian officers and purely Egyptian units of the Egyptian army, with such resulting changes as shall be hereafter specified.

"6. Notify the competent department that the Sudan government will increase the area to be irrigated at Gezira from three hundred thousand feddans to an unlimited figure, as needs may arise.

"7. Withdraw all opposition, in the respect hereafter specified, to the wishes of His Majesty's government concerning the protection of foreign interests in Egypt.

"Failing immediate compliance with these demands, His Majesty's government will at once take appropriate action to safeguard their interests in Egypt and the Sudan.

"I take this opportunity to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

"(Signed) ALLENBY, F. M.,

"His Excellency,

"High Commissioner.

"Saiad Zaghloul Pasha, etc.,

"President of the Council of Ministers."

---

"The Residency, Cairo,

"November 22, 1924.

"Sir:

"With reference to my preceding communication, I have the honor to inform Your Excellency on behalf of His Britannic Majesty's government that its specific requirements respecting the army in the Sudan and the protection of foreign interests in Egypt are as follows:

"I. The Egyptian officers and purely Egyptian units of the Egyptian army having been withdrawn, the Sudanese units of the Egyptian army shall be converted into a Sudan Force, owing allegiance to the Sudan government alone, and under the supreme command of the Governor-General, in whose name all commissions will be given.

"II. The rules and conditions governing the service, discipline, and retirement of foreign officials still employed by the Egyptian government, and the financial conditions governing the pensions of foreign officials who have left the service, shall be revised in accordance with the wishes of His Majesty's government.

"III. Pending the conclusion of an agreement between the two governments regarding the protection of foreign interests in Egypt, the Egyptian government shall maintain the posts of the Financial and Judicial Advisors and preserve their powers and privileges as contemplated on

the abolition of the protectorate; and shall respect the status and present attributions of the European Department of the Ministry of the Interior, as already laid down by Ministerial order, and give due weight to such recommendations as the Director-General may make upon matters falling within his sphere.

"I take this opportunity to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

“(Signed) ALLENBY, F. M.,

“High Commissioner,

“Presidency of the Council of Ministers,

“Cairo, November, 24.

“His Excellency

“Saïad Zaghloul Pasha, etc.,

“President of the Council of Ministers.”

---

His Excellency Saïad Zaghloul Pasha replied to the foregoing notes as follows:

“Presidency of the Council of Ministers,

“Cairo, November 24, 1924.

“Excellency:

“In reply to the two notes which Your Excellency was good enough to address to me during yesterday in the name of the government of His Britannic Majesty, I have first of all the honor to pray Your Excellency to please again express to the said government on behalf of the Egyptian government the great grief and horror that this government and the entire nation have felt because of the execrable murder committed upon the lamented Sirdar of the Egyptian Army and Governor-General of the Sudan, Sir Lee Stack Pasha.

“For this odious crime, perpetrated by criminals whom the nation unanimously condemns, the Egyptian govern-

ment cannot, however, in any way be considered as responsible. This crime was committed, in fact, under circumstances such as could neither have been foreseen nor prevented.

"On the other hand, this government cannot acknowledge the statement contained in the first note communicated, that this crime was the natural result of a political campaign which had not been discouraged by the Egyptian government and which had been fomented by organizations in close contact with it, for this government has always invoked and advocated the employing of legal and peaceful means in demanding the rights of the country, and has never had any contact of any nature whatsoever with organizations recommending the use of violence.

"The only responsibility which the government recognizes and claims for itself is that of pursuing the criminals. Immediate and effective measures have already been taken to this end, and the favorable results already obtained give us full confidence that the criminals will not escape their just punishment.

"However, with a view to demonstrating the profound regret which this crime has produced in the country and to give satisfaction to the government of His Britannic Majesty, I have the honor to state to Your Excellency that the Egyptian government agrees to present its apologies. It also agrees to provide for the payment of a sum of five hundred thousand pounds.

"It states, at the same time, that it has already resolved to prevent, by all legal means at its disposal, popular demonstrations which would be contrary to public safety and to have recourse, if necessary, to Parliament to obtain more ample powers.

“In regard to the demand referred to in paragraph V of the first note and developed in the second note, I have the honor to point out to Your Excellency that the new arrangement proposed for the Egyptian Army of the Sudan constitutes not only a modification of the *status quo* which the English government has declared a desire to maintain, but is in absolute conflict with the provisions of Article 46 of the Egyptian Constitution which provides that the King is the Supreme Commander of the Egyptian army and that he nominates and dismisses the officers.

“As to the demand contained in paragraph VI, I must point out to Your Excellency that the question of modifying henceforth the limit fixed for the area to be irrigated in the Gezira, is at least premature and should, according to the repeated declarations of the government of His Britannic Majesty, be decided by common accord, taking into consideration the vital interests of Egyptian agriculture.

“Finally, relative to the demand contained in paragraph VII, I have the honor to point out to Your Excellency that the position of foreign officials in Egypt is actually regulated by law and diplomatic agreement which cannot be modified without intervention of Parliament. At any rate, the note of the British government does not at all indicate what are the modifications to be introduced into the present regime, therefore we find it impossible to reply to this point. As to the protection of foreign interests in general, the Egyptian government has always adopted the most liberal policy which has been compatible with the principle of independence and no observations have therefore been made concerning this matter by the Foreign Powers.

"I have full confidence that the government of His Britannic Majesty will find the present reply fully satisfactory. It is, at any rate, inspired by the very sincere desire of securing and maintaining with the said government the best relations which may be reconcilable with the rights of Egypt.

"I seize the occasion to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

"President of the Council of Ministers,  
"(Signed) S. ZAGHLOUL.

His Excellency

"Field Marshal Viscount Allenby, G.C.B., G.C.M.C,

"High Commissioner of His Britannic Majesty in Egypt."

---

On the evening of the same day the High Commissioner sent the following note to the Prime Minister:

"The Residency, Cairo,

"November 23, 1924.

"Excellency:

"Referring to the communication of Your Excellency of today's date, I have the honor to inform you that following the refusal of the Egyptian government to acquiesce to those demands of the government of His Britannic Majesty numbered V and VI in my communication of yesterday, instructions are being given to the Sudan government:

"(1) With a view to the withdrawal from the Sudan of all Egyptian officers and purely Egyptian units of the Egyptian army and the modifications resulting from this withdrawal.

"(2) That it is at liberty to increase the area to be irrigated in the Gezira from three hundred thousand feddans to an unlimited figure according to needs.

"Your Excellency will be acquainted in due time with the action which the government of His Britannic Majesty is about to take following the refusal of Your Excellency to acquiesce with demand No. VII relative to the protection of foreign interests in Egypt.

"I note that the Egyptian government accepts, among other demands, demand No. IV. The government of His Majesty expects in this regard that the payment of the sum of half a million pounds be made to me tomorrow before noon.

"I seize this occasion to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

"(Signed) ALLENBY, F.M.,  
"High Commissioner."

His Excellency

"Saiad Zaghloul Pasha,

"President of the Council of Ministers."

---

The Prime Minister replied to the above note as follows, accompanying his reply with a check for lsd. 500,000.

"Presidency of the Council of Ministers,  
"Cairo, November 24, 1924.

"Excellency:

"In reply to your note dated yesterday and in accordance with the note dated the 22d instant, I have the honor to send you herewith a check for lsd. 500,000 on the National Bank of Egypt.

"As to the measure mentioned under Nos. 1 and 2 of Your Excellency's note, the Egyptian government maintains, in every respect, the declarations which it made in its note of the 22d instant and formally protests against the decisions taken by the government of His Britannic



Majesty which it considers unjustifiable and contrary to the recognized rights of Egypt.

"Accept, Excellency, the assurance of my high consideration.

"President of the Council of Ministers,

"Signed) S. ZAGHLOUL.

"His Excellency,

"Field Marshal Viscount Allenby, G.C.B., G.C.M.C.,

"High Commissioner of His Britannic Majesty in Egypt."

---

This note was acknowledged by Lord Allenby as follows:

"The Residency, Cairo,

"November 24, 1924.

"Excellency:

"I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of a check on the National Bank of Egypt sent to the Residency this morning at 11:30 o'clock by His Excellency, the Under Secretary of State of the Ministry of Finance.

"I seize this occasion to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

"(Signed) ALLENBY, F.M.,

"High Commissioner."

"His Excellency,

"Saïad Zaghloul Pasha,

"President of the Council of Ministers."

---

I have already, at some considerable length, commented on this outstanding demand made upon the part of the British government of this people, whom it had previously rendered militarily impotent to defend themselves; and I leave the reader now, after submitting all the facts, to form his own conclusion as to the justice or injustice of this ultimatum.

## CHAPTER XIX

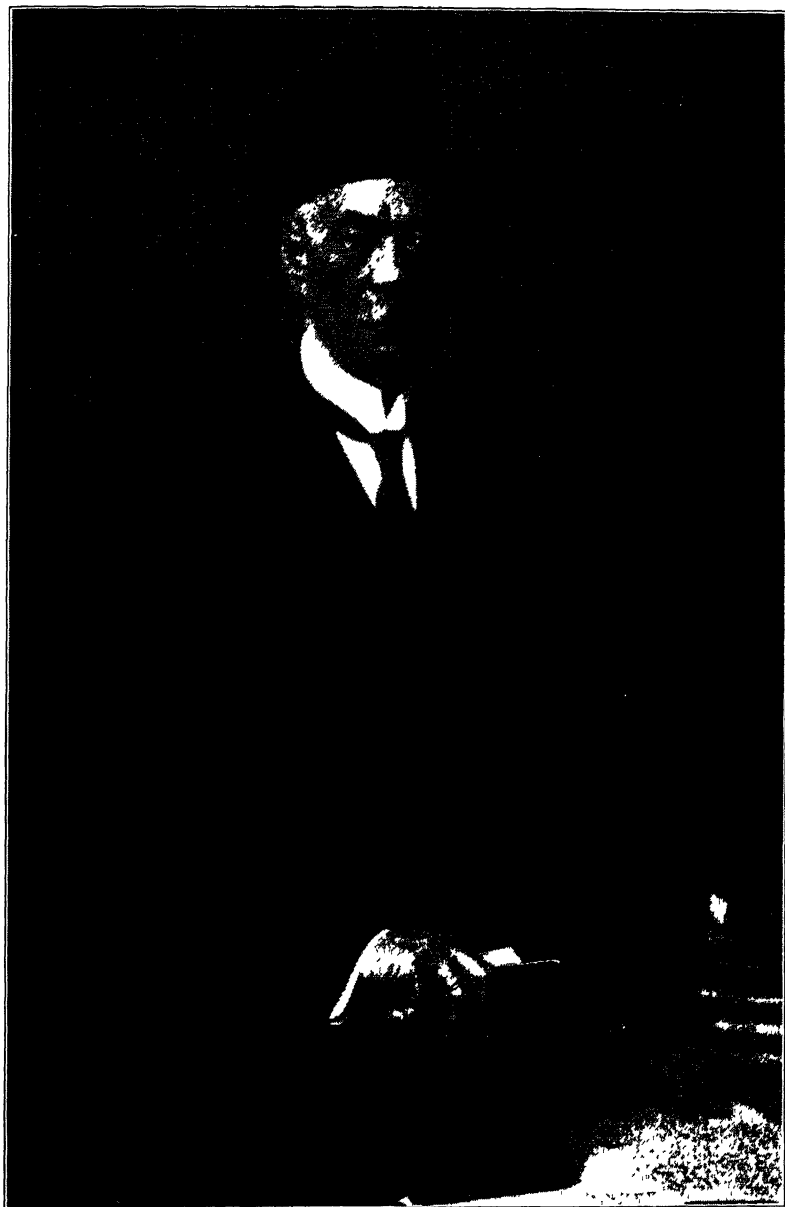
### HIS EXCELLENCY ZAGHLOUL PASHA

I THINK that all will agree that no history of present day Egypt would be complete without reference to one of the most stalwart, patriotic, charitable and sagacious of her sons, the late Saiad Zaghloul Pasha. That he was human and had at least some of the frailties to which the best of the race is heir, no one would care to controvert. But such of these as were a part of his makeup, and they must have been of minor importance, were certainly of the head and not of the heart.

As a husband, we have his charming and cultured wife, and those of his immediate household as witnesses to the fact that he was ever loving, sympathetic and most kind; as a friend, he was loyal and true, and was always loath to believe that any one whom he had once taken into his confidence would prove other than trustworthy. And when in time they would prove otherwise, as only a few did so prove, from out of his thousands of trusted admirers and friends, he was at once ready to extend charity towards them. Whether among Christians, Mohammedans or Jews, I have never seen this "greatest of all virtues" surpassed.

I have in another chapter referred to his amiable, charitable manner displayed towards Lord Allenby on the occasion of the tea held at the Continental Savoy hotel by the Presidents of the Senate and House of Deputies, respectively, directly after the convening of

the first Parliament, and soon after his return from his last banishment from his wife, his home and his country, following which return, the election was held for members of Parliament and he swept the country and was called by his august sovereign, the King, to act as Prime Minister and form a cabinet. He was to Egypt what Samuel Adams was to the American colonists during the days of the Revolutionary War, when we were striving with all the force and power within us to free ourselves from the oppressive heel of that chief of tyrants, George III., of England. Certainly our subject is, or should be regarded as the chief contender for an independent Egypt and he lived to see his work, his ambitions and his hopes in this respect at least partially rewarded on February 28, 1922, and was, aside from his King, the most active as the head of his government in all of its counsels in shaping its policies, until his death August 23, 1927. Of the hundreds of editorials commendatory of the life and accomplishments of this great leader, which appeared in the various magazines and newspapers throughout the United States after his death, there were two which I especially appreciated. They were much shorter than many others mentioned. One was written by a young man, senior of one of the leading high schools in the United States, for the magazine of his school—"The Scholastic." "Zaghloul Pasha Saiad, 76, President of the Egyptian Chamber of Deputies and Nationalist leader, was called 'the grand old man of Egypt.'" "He devoted his life to freeing his country from foreign domination. Zaghloul, who rose from peasant to Prime Minister of Egypt, resigned that position in 1924, rather than accept the drastic terms of England, as a penalty for the assassination of Sir Lee Stack."



HIS EXCELLENCY, SAIAD ZAGHLOUL PASHA  
The Great Egyptian Patriot and Statesman



The other was taken from the Daily Journal of Dayton, Ohio, and is as follows:

"A CASE FOR THE LEAGUE

"All the elements required to bring a difference between nations to the League of Nations for adjustment and settlement seem to exist in the present crisis affecting England and Egypt. A greater power has imposed heavy penalties upon a weaker. The justice of the action properly can be questioned.

"Egypt has placed her case with the league. She has met the demands of the British over the assassination of Sir Lee Stack. Her premier, Zaghoul Pasha, has resigned after expressing the official regrets of his government. Her new premier is doing everything in his power to make amends. But the British are not satisfied.

"They see in this regrettable affair a chance to cement their title to the Sudan and Suez. They are pressing their advantage to the utmost. Egypt cannot resist, she can only pay under protest, and demand justice. The league, on paper, is presumed to deal out justice. Here lies its opportunity."

Apropos of his splendid, charitable disposition towards all people, I recall my first unofficial relation with him as Prime Minister and Minister of the Interior soon after his cabinet was formed. There had come to me several persons connected with the work of the American Near East Relief Association in Greece, which organization had to do with the care of refugee children, the products of the European War (sometimes improperly called the World War) most of whom were Armenians. They numbered at the time to which I allude, more than one million and were almost wholly dependent for their very

existence upon the contributions of the American people, although the government of Greece, terribly crippled as it was as the result of the war, was doing its best in affording relief. They ranged in age from four to sixteen years and our people found that it was imperative to find a home for them where they might be properly assimilated and become real assets to the communities in which they might be placed. His Grace Archbishop Thorgum of Cairo, had been requested to use his good offices in securing the consent of the Egyptian government to the admission of at least twenty of these orphan girls into Egypt, where it was proposed homes would be provided for them among well to do Armenians, not as servants, but as members of the family. In this undertaking, His Grace had, for some reason unknown to him, failed and at this juncture an appeal was made to me to use my influence to secure the end desired.

After getting all the facts with regard to this proposal from the official representatives of the Relief Association then in Cairo, as well as from Hon. Henry Morgenthau, who was at that time in Athens interesting himself in this laudable work, I took the matter up with the Egyptian Minister of Foreign Affairs, Boutros Gahli Pasha, and found a most sympathetic listener. When I had finished my statement of the situation and made our proposal as to what we desired, His Excellency replied that he felt in all circumstances as stated by me, Egypt should contribute her full share to the relief of these orphans and expressed the wish that I discuss the matter with the Prime Minister, Zaghloul Pasha, who also held the Portfolio of Interior, and as the proposal in question had to do, primarily, with the Interior, he should be approached on the matter first. He volunteered to make the ap-

pointment for me to see His Excellency and in due course I took the proposition up with him. I shall not discuss the matter further than to say His Excellency not only agreed to the proposition personally and officially, but arranged to give them greatly reduced transportation on the railroad after their arrival. The admission was not for twenty, but for seven hundred and fifty, and later on, an arrangement was made for the admission of an equal number of boys. This act of mercy has not alone proved a blessing to all of these fifteen hundred children, but they have proved to be an asset to Egypt as well.

No man possessed a kinder heart and stood more ready to help those in need than this great leader. I am sure the fellahs who were his tenants at the time of the "Cotton Crisis" in 1926, will not soon forget his generosity, when he found that they were being sorely pressed to meet their obligations, remitted to them one-half due to him from the cotton crop. This proved, as all Egyptians will remember a two-fold blessing; his tenants were made happy and his example caused other land owners to follow suit and thus the poor were generally blessed.

He was a man, as has been noted, of the common people (fellah) who had risen from the ranks to a high political, educational and social position. He married, when in his thirties, the beautiful and most accomplished daughter of Mustapha Fahmy Pasha, once Prime Minister. He had been in the meantime admitted to the bar and became, admittedly, one of the ablest advocates of the Egyptian bar. In June, 1891, he was appointed Counselor in the Cairo Court of Appeals and held this post until 1906. His decisions were noted for their strict conformity to the law and for absolute justice. He resigned as Counselor to accept the Portfolio of Min-



ister of Education in the cabinet of his late father-in-law, Mustapha Fahmy Pasha. His Excellency was later transferred from the Ministry of Education to the Ministry of Justice, which post he held until 1911.

I have thus briefly reviewed the history of this world known leader, who, after he had reached the age of three score and ten years, and was suffering from marked physical indisposition, was, as heretofore stated, exiled to the most unhealthy islands over which the British flag flies, at the instance of the British government, for no other reason than that of exercising his legal rights, in a perfectly lawful manner, in advocating the independence of his country from foreign domination.

All lovers of justice will rejoice that his Herculean efforts were awarded, at least in part, soon after his return from his second banishment, when the British government declared Egypt to be a Sovereign and Independent State, and this patriotic leader was called to the highest office within the gift of his King, the Prime Ministership of Egypt.

It has occurred to me that he must have had the words of Maltbie Davenport Babcock as his motto, which made him ever strive to free his country from foreign domination and lift his people from their benighted, illiterate plight, into a state made happy by the surroundings essential to at least a fair degree of health and comfort.

#### BE STRONG!

We are not here to play, to dream, to drift;  
We have hard work to do, and loads to lift;  
Shun not the struggle—face it; 'tis God's gift.

**BE STRONG!**

Say not, "The days are evil. Who's to blame?"  
And fold the hands and acquiesce—Oh Shame!  
Stand up, speak out, and bravely, in God's name.

**BE STRONG!**

It matters not how deep intrenched the wrong,  
How hard the battle goes, the day how long;  
Faint not—fight on! To-morrow comes the song.



## CHAPTER XX

### BRITISH CONCEPTION OF HER DUTY IN THE SUDAN—THE SOURCE OF OPIUM IN CHINA —OPIUM CONFERENCE IN GENEVA AND ITS RESULTS.

**B**EFORE leaving the question of the Sudan, I wish to call attention to an article contributed to the London Times in November, 1924, by Lord Meston, which for downright boldness on the Sudan matter, is only surpassed by the statement of the Counselor, and at the time of the statement, acting High Commissioner of Egypt, Mr. Clark-Kerr, who, when asked what the English proposed to do about Sudan, replied: "The Sudanese need us and we need the Sudan; that is all there is to it."

#### LORD MESTON'S VIEW ON THE PROSPECT OF SETTLING THE SUDAN QUESTION

Lord Meston, who had just returned to England from the Sudan, contributed the following interesting article to "*The Sunday Times*":

"To those who watched the arrival of the new Governor-General of the Sudan at Khartum on January 5, there seemed something symbolical in the manner of his coming. Not only was he the first civilian ruler of the Sudan under our regime, but he was destined to journey to his satrapy down the Nile from the South, and not up the Nile from Cairo. Sir Geoffrey Archer had given the go-by to the capital where his predecessor was foully

murdered last November, and he had entered on his duties without formal obeisance to the King of Egypt, from whom in theory he derives a part of his authority.\* Herein he pointed emblematically to the vital questions which face us in the Sudan today. Is the work of building and redeeming the country, on which a handful of British officials have been engaged for the last twenty-five years, to continue? If so, on what lines and to what ends? And in that work what share, if any, is to be entrusted to Egypt? Among its wide imperial responsibilities these are by no means the least important of the questions that England must shortly decide. For the Sudan is more than happy hunting ground, about which chatty books of travel are to be written; it is a huge country, larger than the best half of Europe and though desert and swamp keep much of it sparsely peopled, there are other areas where the population is bound to increase rapidly, where economic developments are coming with a rush, and with their growth will arrive movements and aspirations of a kind which have given us trouble enough elsewhere. It would be well for once to depart from our traditional British method of muddling through, and to have some sort of policy ready for the future of these vast regions on the Upper Nile.

"Throughout the Sudan today, with all races and classes, there is one absorbing question—the relation of the country with Egypt. A more whimsical situation than the present it would be difficult to conceive. The

---

\*Lord Meston, who writes so knowingly and assuredly of the Sudan and its new Governor-General, Sir Geoffrey Archer, did not surmise at the time that the Governor-General in question would, after a very few months of official life in the Sudan, lock horns with the imperialistic High Commissioner of Egypt, George Lloyd, and by reason of the latter's offensive and domineering attitude toward him, as alleged, felt obliged, out of respect and dignity to himself, to resign.

administration of the Sudan rests upon a condominium, or partnership, recognized between Egypt and ourselves. Hitherto Egyptian troops have shared with British the task of garrisoning the country and Egyptian officials have shared with British the duties of the civil government, serving as mamurs (country executive officers) chief clerks, schoolmasters, and the like. Yet within the last two months the Egyptian batteries and battalions have been 'evacuated,' and all but a chosen few of the Egyptian civil servants are being rapidly 'repatriated.' "The hand is the impersonal hand of the Sudan government, but the voice of the British Foreign Office. In plain English, one of the two partners is ejecting the other. And still the Sudanese regiments continue, it is understood, to be paid from the Egyptian budget, and the Egyptian flag continues to fly alongside the British over every public office in the land. It is little wonder that the people are puzzled or that the officials ask where we are steering.

"The pros and cons of the Egyptian connection do not lend themselves to concise statement. The claims of Egypt on the Sudan are based on arguments of history and sentiment; arguments of the part she took in the conquest of the country, solid arguments in the money which she has since spent upon it. They are not claims that can be valued, far less liquidated, without patient negotiation and good will on both sides. They certainly would not be settled by pulling down the British flag in the Sudan, a solution frequently preached on the spot by busy men, impatient of diplomatic niceties.

"But, on the other hand, do not let us belittle our own claims. History, although greater struggles have intervened, will not forget the toils and heroism of our cam-

paign against the Dervish power. Since its release from the Caliphat's tyranny we have worked wonders in the country. It is now on the eve of economic developments through which, we need not be ashamed to argue, our experience alone can guide it. We have the confidence of the people; the Egyptians have not. They have shown no genius for managing either their Arab co-religionists in the North or the pagan tribes in the South. They regard service in the Sudan as exile, and their traditions are not always of the best. They have still to show that they can be good masters in their own house before they aspire to rule in the house of others.

"It may not be easy at the moment for the British government to define the future of the Sudan. They may be debarred from treating it except as one aspect of the larger settlement of Egypt's position. Towards such a settlement they cannot count on any good will from the extreme Nationalist party, or any desire to negotiate; on nothing, indeed but an exaggerated *amour propre* and a wholly artificial and recently invented clamor for the complete independence of the Sudan. In the circumstances the cabinet may not unnaturally hold its hand in the hope that the more sober elements in Egyptian politics will prevail at the coming elections and return a government with which it is possible to treat.

"But if this hope should fail, the problem of the Sudan cannot be indefinitely shelved. There are the beginnings of unrest in the country, and it will rapidly spread unless our policy is set out clearly and with reasonable promptitude. In the interests of a wider justice, therefore, England may soon have again, as often before, to become judge in her own cause. But on one point above all others it is impossible to yield an inch to Egyptian

intransigency. The Sudan must continue to be governed by trained British administrators, selected with the same care and from the same class as those who now staff the public services. Our success in the country has largely been due to the type of Englishmen whom the Sudanese have come to regard as representatives of our race, men whom they can respect and trust. The low white, the nigger-driver, and the mannerless breed of Britishers who have brought us discredit in other eastern countries have not yet found a footing in the Sudan and they must be rigorously kept out. The native still meets us with a manliness and a friendliness which it is worth any effort on our part to preserve.

"As with men, so with measures. In the report which was fated to be the last that Sir Lee Stack was to make on his charge, he described the object of his government as being to leave administration as far as possible in the hands of the native authorities wherever they exist, and by guidance, advice, and correction, where required, to assimilate traditional usage to the requirements of equity and good 'government.' This is the sort of task with which the Egyptian official is not yet familiar; it calls for methods and standards which are not yet his. The time may come when, out of the long and painful process of learning to manage their own country, the governing class in Egypt will acquire the gift of handling other races with wisdom and justice; and they may then claim a share in our work. By that time, however, it is equally conceivable that the Sudanese themselves will be demanding a voice in the matter of who is to govern them if they are to continue to be governed from outside at all. In the meantime the job is ours, and we should lose no time in saying so.



"Another topic there is, on which the British government must shortly break silence. It is the vexed question of the Gezira irrigation, and a word of explanation is necessary to those who are not familiar with the facts. The Gezira is a wide tract on the Blue Nile above Khartum, of much potential fertility, but virtually rainless. Given scientific watering, the soil is admirably suited for growing the finest types of Egyptian cotton, and a reservoir is being constructed on the river at Makwar to feed an elaborate system of canal irrigation for fertilizing the area. Nervousness having been felt in Egypt lest the Makwar dam would prevent the Nile from bringing down in sufficient quantity the water on which the agriculture of the Delta depends for its existence, it had been proposed to limit to 300,000 acres the scope of the new canal system in the Gezira; for it could be easily demonstrated how the amount of water required to irrigate so restricted an area would leave an ample supply to meet all the needs of Lower Egypt.

"So stood the matter when Sir Lee Stack was assassinated. In passing sentence on Egypt for that crime, the British government intimated that it would not limit the irrigable area in the Gezira to 300,000 acres. This, of course was immediately seized upon by the Egyptian agitators as a threat to appropriate the water which is the breath of life to the peasantry of the Delta and the prosperity of the whole country. We were pilloried as deliberately setting out to enrich the Sudan and Lancashire at the price of starving the helpless fellaheen of Egypt.

"Nothing could be further from the truth. The 300,000 acres limit has always been regarded by experts as an unfortunate concession to Egyptian sentiment—un-

fortunate in the sense that, to remove the alleged grievance, it was wholly unnecessary. The technique of Nile control is complicated; but it is relatively simple of proof that the Gezira irrigation could be largely extended without diminishing by a single gallon, at the time when it is wanted, the supply essential for raising the crops in the Delta. The manner of the announcement created something like dismay among Englishmen in the Sudan; its capacity for the gravest misrepresentation was so obvious. It is not only the minds of the simple Egyptian peasantry that are poisoned by skillful propaganda; a large section of the Continental Press is convinced that we are again perpetrating a pernicious job in the interests of our cotton industry. It is surely in the first order of expediency that our government should issue a clear statement of the meaning of the threat and a categorical disclaimer of any intention to plunder the people of Egypt."

Is not this position of the noble Lord like that taken by the British in China in 1790, when, by their gun boats, they forced the Chinese government to admit, through the East India Company, opium for illicit sale to the Chinese people? Up to that date, the records disclose, the Chinese people never used this drug, except for strictly medical purposes. The records further show that within one year from the time the British forced opium upon this peaceful, prosperous and law abiding people, they had introduced and sold four thousand and fifty-four chests of opium—not chests of tea. The British had taken from China as the result of this debauching business what would be today the equivalent of nearly a million and half dollars. This business has continued from the date mentioned up to this time, and God only knows the number of millions of helpless, hapless, ruined Chinese

who have lost all that life holds really worthwhile as the result of this illicit traffic fastened upon them by the bayonet in the hands of the British, supported by the British government. Hon. Paul Linebarger, international lawyer and counselor of the late Dr. Sun Yat Sen (founder of the Chinese Republic); United States Judge (Philippines, 1901-1907, first instance); author of Doctor Sun's biography, "Sun Yat Sen and the Chinese Republic" etc., in his little book, "Our Common Cause with China Against Imperialism and Communism," declares among many other strikingly significant facts with regard to this awful crime, forced upon a "heathen people" by a so-called Christian one, that: "Frantically did the Chinese authorities attempt to suppress the traffic, punishing the users of opium with cangue (pillory), bamboo (flogging) and even death by strangulation. Their efforts were futile, for the insidious and carefully advanced plans of the English overcame even the vigilance of the law. Supposing," he continues, by way of illustration, "that immediately after our War of 1812, we had promulgated the Volstead Act, and that England, with the other principal nations of Europe had forced us to buy their whiskey, brandies, and wines. Do you think we could have made any headway against their armed insistence if we continued to allow prohibited products to enter? So it was with the Chinese after the Opium War."

In passing, I wish to remark that I think any American interested in Chinese problems should read this little production of Judge Linebarger, published by The Chinese Nationalist Party, North Los Angeles, California. The American people and those of other countries who believe in common decency (and there are many such) will recall the attitude of the British at the Opium Con-

ference held at Geneva, in November, 1924. Our delegates to this conference, Congressman Porter, Bishop Brent and Surgeon-General Rupert Blue, insistently held that this deadly traffic could be regulated solely by adherence to the proposition that only sufficient poppy should be grown in the various countries to supply the legitimate demands of opium and its derivatives for medical and scientific purposes; holding that in all other respects this drug was demoralizing and distinctly deleterious. The British delegates refused to yield to this humanitarian principle on the ground that Britain needed the money, and the conference, like the Disarmament Conference held at the same place, came to naught. The latter project failed by reason of the refusal of the British delegates to agree with those of the United States and Japan along lines, which it was believed by the two latter powers would redound to the security and peace of the world.

No wonder that Lord Cecil, the most potent and influential official connected with the League of Nations, resigned, giving as his reason for so doing the unreasonable attitude of the British government upon this very vital question. When, in 1921, the Peace and Disarmament Conference was held in Washington, the United States government was engaged in building a navy that would equal or surpass that of any other one in the world. As England's "Grand Old Man," Lord Balfour, who assured us before we entered the World War that England had no secret treaties, he and his colleagues had little difficulty in persuading the government of President Harding (which had for its chief the wise and sagacious Charles Evans Hughes) that certain vessels, including many in the United States old, new, and those in process

of building, should be scrapped, and that a ratio in the matter of naval equipment, as it applied to the United States, England and Japan, should be 5, 5, 3 respectively.\* The United States of America has kept the faith; has England?

It was interesting to note that after President Coolidge's message to Congress in December, 1927, wherein he expressed his disappointment over the result of the Conference under reference and recommended a liberal appropriation for better naval equipment, to find King George, on the proroguing of Parliament, almost immediately upon the convening of our Congress, declaring that: "The British government has no intention of embarking upon an increase in its naval building program despite the 'temporary failure' of the Geneva conference to reach a general agreement." Here is his statement, in full as respects this part of his speech from the throne:

"A conference with representatives of the United States of America and Japan was held at Geneva at which the delegates of my government put forward proposals for the future limitation of armaments, which, if accepted, would have led to substantial reductions in naval strengths and costs. I regret that it was not possible to reach a general agreement. But in spite of this temporary failure, my government has no intention of embarking upon an increase in their naval building program, which is based upon a considered view of the defensive needs of my wide spread empire."

The speech referred to the value of the various colo-

---

\*As to the question of secret treaties on the part of England and other European countries at the time we were assured by England there were none such, those interested should read, "Facing Europe," by Frederick Bausman, The Century Company, 1926.

nial and inter-imperial conferences held in London "which bring together in a spirit of comradeship and mutual assistance those engaged in similar work overseas."

What has all this to do with Egypt? Much, we should say. If this great Empire is allowed to dominate a nation of four hundred million Chinese, and now permitted to dictate terms to the United States of America, without a question the greatest individual power on earth, what hope has Egypt for independence without a war vessel, or an army except one presided over by a British official? Apropos of the Egyptian army and the British Chief, I wish to call attention to the crisis which was precipitated in the summer of 1927 by the present British High Commissioner George Lloyd, by his special demand that a Britisher be selected and appointed as head of the Egyptian army. This demand, the full text of which has not, up to this writing, been given out by either the British or Egyptian governments, was not received kindly by the latter government, whereupon the "Noble Lord" Lloyd asked of his government, and was given, three warships—two for Alexandria and one for Port Said. This move upon his part took place, as I now recall it, about the middle of May, 1927. It is believed that through the process of duress, Egypt yielded to the demand of the "Noble Lord" Lloyd. At least the warships were permitted to leave the Egyptian waters. There was no apparent disposition on the part of the Egyptian government or its people, on this question, other than to maintain in the most civil and reasonable manner their rights to control or officer their own small army, but Lloyd evidently thought, and made his government believe, that the quickest and safest way to secure this most unreasonable demand, was to hold over

these helpless people the frightful punishment such as was administered to them in 1882. While this crisis was on the officials of the Parliament or a committee appointed by it, came to me with a request that I consent to have a tea and reception given in my honor at the Continental Hotel, June 3, as I had resigned my post, owing to the severe and continued illness of Mrs. Howell. I gave my consent for the tea to be given. I cannot here give a detailed account of the reception. A report was sent out that this meeting was a political scheme to embarrass the British interests and to strengthen the hands of the Egyptian government on the question then at issue.

Of course nothing was further from the truth. The meeting was attended by every official, I believe, of both the Senate and the House of Deputies, by the most prominent members of the same, by every official of the King's Palace, members of the Diplomatic Corps, cabinet ministers, and by hundreds of the foremost men and women of Egypt, many of whom were unable to gain admittance to the large dining room, owing to the large crowd. After the speeches of their excellencies, Wacyf Boutros Gahli Pasha, Mustapha el Nahas Pasha, Dr. Hafiz Affifi Bey, Honorable William Mackram, I responded, the full text of my response being as follows:

*Your Excellencies, Honorable Members of Parliament,  
my Egyptian Friends generally and my country-  
men, your guests:*

I am not unmindful of the very high honor you have conferred upon me, on this unusual occasion, in thus signally expressing your confidence in me as Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of my govern-

ment near that of the government of His Majesty the King of Egypt.

After serving my country for nearly six years in this capacity and to realize, as I have been made to realize upon many occasions during these years, but especially so today, at the close of my term of service, when I find myself surrounded by the distinguished members of His Majesty's cabinet as well as by the members of Parliament, that I am in deed and in truth *persona grata* to your government and to your fourteen millions of people.

Parenthetically, I wish to observe that my relations with the Diplomatic Corps, many of whom are here present, have been of the most cordial character. There has never been the least jar among us and I think there has not obtained at any time other than a feeling of mutual regard and esteem for each other.

I am sure that few, if any here present, have forgotten some things I said in my remarks to your scholastic and generally well disposed King, when presenting my Letter of Credence, I said: May it please Your Majesty, my diplomatic language shall be yea, yea and nay, nay—in other words, yes will mean yes, and no will mean no. You know whether I have been true to the declaration then expressed.

I may here be permitted to say with regard to His Majesty, the King, that no representative to this or any other country could have received greater help and more consideration than has been accorded me by your splendidly disposed Monarch, Fuad I. His Majesty's exalted position, as with all rulers or heads of governments, is fraught with great responsibility, especially is this true of your beloved King, and I know you mean to render



him such support as will gladden his heart and make him feel that he has a government and people upon whom he may rely along all just and reasonable lines. Permit me to congratulate you upon the manner in which all, or nearly all, of the political parties in your country have coalesced in order that you might maintain in every respect the legal and moral rights of your great country—the cradle of civilization.

I have been distinctly proud to associate with such able statesmen as your honored and universally beloved Zaghloul Pasha; the conservative, loyal and patriotic Adly Pasha; your astute and markedly gifted Prime Minister, Sarwat Pasha, whom I met in the capacity of both Prime and Foreign Minister when I first arrived in Egypt, accredited to this government; then your tried and true Rushdi Pasha, who has served you long and ably as Prime Minister and now as President of your Senate, who deserves and receives your highest esteem. I would also include in this list the amiable and splendidly disposed Ziwari Pasha.

While speaking of your statesmen (time will not permit me to name all of them one by one), I must not neglect to mention those other than of Mohammedan faith, for you know it is currently believed in some parts of the world that between the Copts and the Mohammedans there is much strife. Now with regard to this report, those of us who know the truth are acquainted with the fact that no more loyal Egyptians are to be found than obtain among these Egyptian Christians. This fact is, I think, universally recognized by all your leaders, both Mohammedan and Christian, and at this moment, you have that gifted Christian gentleman Marcus Hanna Pasha for your Foreign Minister, and I

know you count among your most reliable subjects that scholarly patriot, ex-Minister for Foreign Affairs, Wacyf Boutros Gahli Pasha; also Sadek Wahba Pasha, Sadik Pasha Hanein, Senator Habib Khayatt, George Wissa Pasha and many others which time will not permit me to mention, so that it would seem that the minorities are very well satisfied to labor with their Mohammedan brethren in all those matters which redound to the welfare of the country's interest and vice versa.

There is so much said and written about the crime wave in Egypt that I wish to say that, while now and then a terrible outrage is recorded here, we have only to remember that in not a few of these cases foreign nationals and not Egyptians are implicated.

I wish here further to observe in regard to your people, in the matter of crime, that I know of no people anywhere, in any nation, who have so little to their discredit along these lines. The crime wave is far worse in the United States of America than in Egypt; as to other countries in this matter you may draw your own conclusions. I will say this, however, that in no country in which I have been, and I have been in nearly all of them, have I felt so secure as to my person and to my personal belongings as in Egypt. It is the belief of both Mrs. Howell and myself that not a piaster has been taken from us, or anything of value in our six years' stay at the Legation. Our servants have had access to money and other possessions and no door about the premises has been under lock and key except those on the outside of the house. Such confidence does not often obtain among the servant class anywhere in the United States.

When you have eliminated the baneful use of opium and its derivatives, as well as alcoholic beverages, from

the confines of your country those of your criminal class will be under still better control. This very thing my country has lifted its strong legal arm to accomplish and it will succeed in its endeavor within the next five years. You have made a splendid start by not permitting any poppy to be grown on your soil; you have, too, taken steps to control the sale of intoxicating liquor to your people.

It is urged that capitulations held by certain powers will preclude the possibility of passing a prohibition measure for the control of this traffic. I only have to say in this respect that it is unthinkable that my government, as a capitulatory power, would obstruct your way in legislating against this course. For my government and people stand, not alone for the best interests of its citizenship generally, but for the people with whom, officially and socially, they come in contact in other countries.

I congratulate you upon this splendid showing. I again congratulate you in your endeavor to reverse the ratio of illiteracy to literacy. No ruler anywhere surpasses your own kingly Sovereign in his efforts to remove the blight of ignorance from your fourteen million people. I am pleased to see that you are supporting His Majesty loyally in your parliamentary endeavor along these and other important lines.

It is worthy of note that your transportation facilities, particularly your railway service, has undergone such a metamorphosis within the past few years as to compare favorably, certainly, with those of Europe.

Your Department of Health, under the guidance and leadership of that splendidly poised and remarkably able physician and sanitarian, Mohammed Shahine Pasha, is

making great strides towards lowering the mortality rate by giving to the people in the villages and rural districts water free of pathogenic (disease) germs and at the same time providing for them houses where sanitation will reign instead of the death-dealing anopheles mosquito and the disease spreading fly.

One could go on *ad infinitum* as to the activities now being carried on for the physical, social, moral and financial betterment of your wonderful country and people, but I must not further dwell on them. I desire, however, in conclusion to congratulate you on having attained (after many years of honest endeavor) the status of an independent sovereign state. Doubtless you will readily recall the many hardships which your leaders have been called upon to pass before this desired place among the nations was reached—all honor to them!

In closing permit me to wish you God-speed and to recall to you the words of Shakespeare in the matter of dealing with all kinds of contentions, when he said: "Thrice is a man armed who hath his quarrel just."

The friendly attitude, and the expressions made, upon this occasion by all the Egyptian cabinet, officials of the Parliament and its members towards me and my official sojourn among them, together with my remarks in praise of this lovable and peaceable people brought forth rather violent and most absurd criticism from a British sheet printed in Alexandria, which is the mouthpiece of the British High Commissioner. These editorial criticisms were repeated after my speech delivered at the Majestic hotel, in Alexandria, before the Egyptian Temperance Society on the eve of my leaving Egypt, this meeting being presided over by His Royal Highness Prince Omar Toussoun. In this address I took occasion

to congratulate the officers and members of this organization on its splendid and courageous work in their endeavor to rid their country (which is naturally and normally opposed to all intoxicating liquors for beverage purposes) of the curse of the liquor traffic which had been brought to them as opium was taken into China by foreigners, as heretofore mentioned. I said it was unthinkable that my government, opposed as it was to the liquor traffic, would take advantage of its capitulatory rights, whereby it might prevent the government of Egypt from passing a law which would rid their country of this demoralizing and debasing traffic.

I referred to the splendid results which had obtained through the adoption of the 18th Amendment and the Volstead Act and recited extended proof of same. Well, all this is not pleasing to a people who believe that "whisky and soda" is a part of the staff of life.

I have been told that of the fifty ambassadors and ministers serving the United States government in foreign countries that I was the only one of the number who did not serve alcoholic drinks of some kind at official dinners. This may or may not be true, but certain it was that no such beverages were served at the American Legation or any other place by me while I was Minister. And I may add that neither the American Minister nor his government suffers in prestige as the result of the omission of this practice.

In the first place, I am personally opposed to the use of alcohol in any form as a beverage. In the second place, if I were not so opposed, I have too much respect for my oath and the constitution and laws of my country to permit the use of alcoholic beverages on the official premises of the government of my country, and I may

further observe that if I had my way with regard to this traffic as it concerns our Embassies and Legations, so long as the 18th Amendment remains a part of the Constitution and the law for its enforcement continues to be virile upon the statute book of our country, an executive order would be issued to the effect that no such beverage as mentioned, would be permitted on the premises of the Embassies, Legations or at any other place at which American representatives were acting as hosts. Such an action, I believe, would have a very wide influence for good.

I have referred to the overbearing, autocratic conduct of Lloyd, the present High Commissioner, at different times since succeeding that splendid and perfect gentleman, Lord Allenby. I shall refer briefly to one other matter in which he figured and pass on to a more important and interesting subject. Directly after it was officially announced that Lloyd was to succeed Lord Allenby as High Commissioner, and that he was on his way to Egypt, a notice was sent out from the Residency to the members of the Diplomatic Corps, to the effect that the new High Commissioner would arrive in Egypt on a certain date and train, and by reading between the lines could be seen a desire upon the part of the Residency for the members of the Corps to attend his arrival. I had given this invitation such consideration as I deemed it merited and made up my mind that there was no official or other good reason why I should attend upon his arrival. I may say, however, that when Lord Allenby left Egypt I did go to the station to see him off and to again express my regret at his departure; but this action upon my part was purely personal. I had been associated with him and held him in high esteem. Lloyd, I

did not know. Within a few days after having received the invitation mentioned, my secretary advised that a certain member of the Diplomatic Corps wished to see me at our Legation. An appointment was made for him and upon his arrival, and after the usual amenities, he said that he came to confer with me regarding the invitation to attend the arrival of the new High Commissioner. He observed that three members of the corps, naming them, had casually met and that this matter had been discussed and that they were of the opinion that it was not the proper, or dignified thing to do, and that the other two members had suggested that they talk to me relative to the matter.

I thanked him for thus bringing to my attention the views of these colleagues and said that I concurred in their judgment. As he was leaving the Legation he said that there was one member of the corps whom they feared might demur to this view, for mercenary reasons, and in this connection mentioned the fact that the concession of the Egyptian government of Jerabub (an oasis on the west coast of Africa) was now a rather heated question and that this diplomat's country would require help from England to secure it. This they thought might probably cause him to hesitate. But when he left I felt that the matter was probably settled in the manner he desired. Within a day or two he asked to see me again and I found that this visit was upon the same subject. He said the very thing referred to as might happen, did happen; our friend and colleague who was interested in securing Jerabub felt that he must attend the arrival of the High Commissioner and he had said to one of his colleagues interested in Syria and Morocco, "You may need the help of England, and I think it would be un-

wise for you not to attend"; and so my visiting friend said they had concluded to attend Lloyd's arrival at the station. I replied that if I concluded to change my mind in the matter I would so advise him and his colleagues.

I did not change my mind and therefore did not go. The day following the High Commissioner's arrival another member of the corps came to the Legation to congratulate me on my good sense, as he termed it, in my refusing to subscribe to the action of the members of the corps who attended his arrival, and he remarked that they, including himself, who did go were treated with about as much consideration as if they had been mere boys.

Cognizance was taken of my absence by the Residency, I happen to know. But the shabby treatment accorded the foreign representatives on this occasion was but the beginning of other indignities heaped upon the Diplomatic Corps, until the matter was finally taken up at a called meeting of this body at the French Legation, when it was decided unanimously to take up his unethical, imperialistic conduct with the Egyptian Minister for Foreign Affairs.

A committee of three consisting of the Doyen, (Dean) Minister of France, the Minister from Turkey, and the Minister from the United States, myself, was selected to discuss the question at issue with the Egyptian Foreign Office and suffice it to say that when it had finished its task the High Commissioner was accorded only such status as was properly his due at the head of the corps, as one holding ambassadorial rank—a place which the diplomatic body at all times was willing to accord him. Up to this time he was taking precedence at official functions over the King's representative and the Prime and



other Ministers of the King's Cabinet. The officiousness of this young "fiery High Commissioner" as evidenced by his interference with the courts, was thought by them to be impudent, but believed by him, apparently, to be within his imperial rights.

This interference was shown in the trial of various men charged with the crime of murder of both British and native subjects during the month of June, 1926. The trial was conducted before a tribunal of three judges, consisting of two natives and one British, Judge Kershaw representing the latter. He, Kershaw, was also acting as president or presiding judge and as such delivered the verdict, or judgment of the court. Directly after the trial, contrary to all precedent, he resigned for the reason, as alleged, that the judgment which he rendered in the trial of these men was out of conformity with the evidence. It was charged, and I think quite universally believed, that this unprecedented action upon the part of Judge Kershaw came about by reason of direct interference of the High Commissioner Lloyd. I have said unprecedented, for the rule in the Egyptian courts as provided I believe, by the Napoleon code, that in case of a court consisting of more than two judges, the verdict finally agreed upon is to be given out as unanimous. If there has been a dissenting opinion with respect to what the verdict should be, no mention is to be made of such dissent having occurred in the chambers of the court. The following February, Kershaw was appointed to a country judgeship in England and a press dispatch from England, alluding to this appointment, attempted to make the point that Judge Kershaw, by this appointment, had at last reaped the just reward of his government for the personal pecuniary sacrifices which he made

in resigning his appointment under the Egyptian government, "rather than appear to concur in a judgment which he felt to be against the weight of evidence."

Apropos of "personal pecuniary sacrifices" of these British officials, I wish to again touch upon the Personal Indemnity question which arose between the British and Egyptian governments, after the Declaration of February 28, 1922 was proclaimed by the British, which will indicate who has made the "sacrifice." I may not be expected to discuss it at great length, but it is a matter of such serious monetary interest to the Egyptian people, at the same time registering another British imposition upon these helpless people, that I cannot pass it by without notice.

Let me observe at the outset that these British employes to the number of fifteen hundred, more or less, (usually more) range from judicial adviser to official dog catcher and from the date of the British government's imposing itself upon this people in 1882, they (the employes) have been receiving compensations for their services much in excess of that paid for such work in any other country of the globe over which the British flag flies, and paid, mark you, from the Egyptian treasury at the instance or demand of British officials high in authority. So soon as the declaration was announced, giving to Egypt her independence, the British employes began to busy themselves over indemnities and pensions which they persuaded themselves they should still exact from the Egyptian government. It is said that an expert actuary was employed for a considerable time in working out a plan or basis for such extra compensation and that when it was submitted to Lord Allenby he would not approve it, on the ground that it was prohib-

itive in the amount the Egyptian government should pay, and that he recommended that the basis upon which such a demand be proposed be cut down. Be that as it may, a demand was made on the Egyptian government for personal indemnity and pension for all British employes at a time when the government of Egypt was composed of Egyptians whom the British officials could and did control. This law was passed by the Council of Ministers (not the Egyptian Parliament) on July 18, 1923.

We summarize below the main provisions. The law fixes the term of three years from April 1, 1924, to April 1, 1927, for the retirement of these officials, and provides that any official who wishes to retire within that period may apply to the Ministry of Finance, stating the date upon which he wishes to leave. An official who options to retire on April 1, 1927, will leave the government service automatically on that date, unless he has been informed by the Ministry of the Interior prior to April 1, 1927, that he will be released earlier than that date for which he had applied (i. e. April 1, 1927). In any case six months notice of the date of termination of service will be given an official.

The Egyptian government will have the power, with the assent of the official, to retain him in service beyond April 1, 1927, or beyond an earlier date on which he has been advised that his services will be dispensed with.

The scheme is also applicable to: (1) Non-pensionable government officials, on monthly pay, who will have fifteen years completed service on the date of the enforcement of the law. (2) Non-pensionable officials who occupy permanent posts provided for in the budget of the state, and who entered the service prior to August 1, 1914.

The law further provides that a council be appointed by the Minister of Finance, to be composed of four Egyptians and four Europeans to supervise the carrying out of this scheme. The four Europeans will be nominated by the Egyptian government, with assent of the High Commissioner (note the assent of the High Commissioner). The president will be an Egyptian and will make the decision in case of a tie vote. In his absence, the senior Egyptian will act as president. A quorum will consist of six members, of whom three must be Europeans.

If compensation above 4,000 Egyptian pounds (\$20,000) is payable, it will be subject to a sliding scale which will make the highest sum which any official can receive 8,000 pounds (\$40,000). I ask the reader to take notice of these exorbitant sums provided in the way of indemnity for certain official British subjects besides the pension provided for them in many cases. Mark you, these indemnities and pensions have been fixed in reality by the British government, and the Egyptian government has been forced by it to accept same. This notwithstanding, as above pointed out, these employes have enjoyed during their time of service the salaries paid for similar service anywhere in all Europe, or the United States of America for that matter. The Egyptian government will have paid out in personal indemnities alone to these British officials and clerks, when all claims have been settled, \$40,000,000.

This vast sum, it will be noted, is for indemnities alone, and is entirely aside from amounts they are to receive in the way of pensions. For downright imposition it is unsurpassed, unless it be in the demands made (and secured through force) at the time of the ultimatum, when the British took over the Sudan and \$2,500,000 in

cash, on the pretext that the Egyptian government was responsible for the killing of Sir Lee Stack. Nor is this all with respect to this law. While it was provided and agreed to by the British that the period of service of all such British officials and employes should expire April 1, 1927, hundreds of them are still in Egypt drawing salaries. Notwithstanding the fact that these indemnities have been paid, the present High Commissioner is seeing to it, in his usual autocratic manner, under various pretexts, that they are retained. It is true that there is somewhat of a dearth of competent Egyptian help, but even this situation has been brought about by the "occupants" of Egypt giving to their own subjects for the last forty years the best posts available to the exclusion of the Egyptians and little attempt has been made upon the part of the "occupants" to train or school the Egyptians for the work which they have in hand.

However, as indicated, educational advantages under the present ruler are now such that Egyptians are rapidly being brought up to a point that will enable them to successfully handle any post in the public service.

But when will Britain release its strangle-hold on these people? There remains, as I see it, but one of two ways for the Egyptians to escape. (1) To get their case before the League of Nations (if they are able to overcome the opposition of the British) so that all the facts concerning their political situation may be exposed before this body and the world. (2) To provide a bureau of information in the principal capitals, presided over by the most trustworthy Egyptians, from which source facts (propaganda) regarding Egypt, with particular reference to her political situation, would be available to all the leading newspapers and magazines

throughout these countries. This latter plan, I am prepared to believe, would have much of the same effect as was brought about by the stinging editorial criticisms which prevailed everywhere, over the brutal ultimatum issued by the British after the death of Sir Lee Stack, to which reference has been made. At that time it was shown, that Egypt was to be robbed of her historic rights in the matter of her supply of water from the Sudan.



## CHAPTER XXI

### "THE CAPITULATIONS—EXTRA TERRITORIAL RIGHTS"

CAPITULATIONS, or extra-territorial rights, mean literally, that a government or power, granting such, surrenders to the government or power receiving them, complete jurisdiction over the nationals receiving such favors and residing in the country, exempting them from the operation of all law of the land and all taxes of whatsoever kind, except that of a land tax, should real estate be owned by them. The subjects or citizens, whose countries enjoy "capitulatory rights" may engage in any commercial enterprise in which the capital invested may amount to millions of dollars, and whose profits from such investments may attain an unlimited figure, yet the government which has granted these "rights" cannot collect one dollar in the way of taxes from them.

There are in Egypt today, it is estimated, one hundred thousand foreigners, citizens and subjects, who are engaged in commercial or professional activities, such as bankers, jewelers, druggists, brokers, physicians, surgeons, dentists, etc., who are thus exempt from taxation.

Very soon after my official life in Egypt was begun, I had my attention called to the injustice of the operation of these territorial rights (for my government enjoys such privileges, with many other powers which we shall



mention). I shall refer to one case in point, which had to do with a police regulation as showing the marked inconsistency and injustice in the operation of such "rights": Aside from the regular municipal police force operating in the various cities and incorporated towns, the government maintains a police organization whose members are known as Ghaffer police. They are analogous to the merchant police of the States. The duty of these officers is to guard the property in both the business and residential districts, particularly the former, at night, without regard as to whom such places may belong. Merchants and business men of all nationals were asked in simple justice, to contribute their share of the tax to support this very useful and needy organization.

I may say in passing, that under British martial law this tax provision was rigidly enforced, but as soon as military operations were abolished, Europeans, including the British, began to take advantage of their capitulatory rights, and refused to pay the tax. The government appealed to the various members of the Diplomatic Corps for their assistance in the collection of this tax. A meeting of the Corps was called at the instance of the Doyen, and the matter was fully discussed, and the record will show that I insisted that the tax should be paid; that it was unthinkable that these men doing business—profitable in many instances in the extreme—should not be required to pay their just share of the expense. I say "this" because, as I shall point out below, they escape under capitulatory rights, the payment of all other tax. Well, finally, it was agreed that we advocate the payment of the tax in Cairo, Alexandria, Port Said, Assiut and a few other cities and towns, but that no compulsory methods should be taken to compel payment.

I advised all Americans doing business in Egypt, to pay this tax and so far as I know they complied with my request. I should regard anyone who refused to do so as a professional ingrate.

I think every individual who appreciates patriotism, loves justice, and delights in fair play is ready to take his hat off to Turkey, reduced as she was after the war from a great empire to a small circumscribed territory with but four million people, over her success at the Lausanne Conference in ridding herself of all extra-territorial rights. I am pleased to see that all our American educators in Turkey are in favor of this treaty, and I shall hope to see the United States Senate, in the very near future follow the recommendation of President Coolidge and confirm the treaty. But whether it does so or not, Turkey is functioning, without let or hindrance, as a sovereign State, in deed and in truth.

The Nationalist party of China has been fighting for years to rid that country of foreign dictation, which carries with it capitulatory or extra-territorial rights. This party has been successful in a large measure, for the United States of America has recognized her independence, and other powers—some of them reluctantly—are following suit. It is to be firmly hoped that the winning of this victory will enable China to stamp out forever that iniquitous, blighting curse that was fastened upon her in 1790 by the East India Company, a British corporation, backed by British gunboats, reference to which imposition is fully discussed in a former chapter.

The British government has made overtures to the various capitulatory powers, I understand, including my own, to take over these "rights" and in doing so be re-

sponsible to the powers for the just treatment of their nationals. No one of them has shown its willingness to accept the proposal nor is any likely to do so.

The British government in her Declaration of Independence of Egypt in 1922, claims the right to protect foreigners in Egypt and minorities (the latter, natives other than the Mohammedans, presumably the Christians, known as Copts, who number about one million of the fourteen million plus inhabitants.)

Of course this is all bunk, for all countries which hold or enjoy capitulatory rights jealously guard the rights of all their own citizens, or subjects, and Britain, therefore, has no jurisdiction over any one of them. The native Christians (Copts) have neither asked for, nor do they desire any "protection" from the British government.

Nor is the question of taxation under the capitulations the greatest hindrance—tremendously unjust and unfair as it is to Egypt—a sovereign and independent State; which, in reality she is not, neither indeed can be, so long as these capitulations obtain. And, I may properly add, too, so long as a pompous High Commissioner is permitted to take unto himself the attributes of a sovereign ruler, and has in his cabinet a judicial advisor, and a financial advisor, who act as autocratic censors of the Egyptian Ministry, and who control absolutely, through him, the Egyptian army and the police force in the principal cities of the country, by having his own nationals appointed commandants of these forces; and finally who has an army of his own countrymen to the number of twenty thousand standing "attention," awaiting his command. But I take it that my own government and people, as well as some of the other powers, which "en-

joy these rights" believe in fair play, and will, therefore, be willing to give this question serious consideration to the end that they may be annulled and thus end what is really a travesty upon justice.

The International Economic Conference which was held in Geneva, lately, was the outcome of what would appear to be a sincere and ardent desire to analyze the state of economic unrest brought about at the close of the great war. Its greatest aim was to find out a means of improving such conditions, of devising such processes as would tend toward a closer contact among nations and of securing as long a period as possible of universal peace, without which no constructive scheme could ever be contemplated.

A country gifted with an ideal geographical position, a fertile soil handed down to it from the remotest times in history, a docile, peace-loving, and industrious population, a temperate climate appropriate to the full exercise and development of human effort in all fields of activity, ought to have found no barriers in the accomplishment of the great task set before it.

Unfortunately, however, it has had many hindrances to thus obstruct its progress, and among the number, as indicated, are the capitulations, in the granting of which Egypt had no word. This obstacle has paralyzed the worthy efforts to promote conditions in every department and stands today as a great menace to the right that people have of enjoying the benefits of modern advancement.

The system of the capitulations in Egypt dates back to the time when Egypt formed part of the Turkish dominions. Its aim was to attract and to attempt foreigners to live on Turkish territory and establish them-

selves with the privilege that they would enjoy the laws and customs of their own country. All these privileges, as time went on, were extended from one country to another until the number of capitulatory powers in Egypt before the great war reached fifteen, namely, Great Britain, United States of America\*, France, Italy, Spain, Holland, Belgium, Norway, Sweden, Denmark, Greece, Portugal, Russia, Germany and Austria-Hungary. However, after the war, Russia, Germany and Austria lost these privileges.

These extra-territorial rights were extended through abuse and were misinterpreted until they greatly exceeded their former object, thus changing the whole complexion of the situation.

In order to understand clearly the evils of such a regime, it is necessary to explain how they are a stumbling-block to Egypt's progress, economically and socially.

#### ECONOMIC EVILS OF THE CAPITULATIONS

The revenue of any country should be sufficient for the maintenance and upkeep of the government's mechanism, as well as for the carrying out of the many different projects necessary for the progress of the inhabitants in education, sanitation, agriculture, communication, etc.

Furthermore, such revenue should be drawn from those who can afford to pay and from those who benefit by the work of the government. Therefore, it should be considered a gross injustice to exempt this latter class, namely, the rich and those who benefit from the work of the government, from paying their share of taxation, and

---

\*The United States obtained these capitulatory rights during the administration of President Andrew Jackson, 1829-1832.

it should be considered also a thing apart from justice to expect the land owners alone, many of whom are poor, to bear all the expense of maintaining the government.

In all civilized countries at present, the income tax is the basis of a very fair system of taxation. In this arrangement any income below a certain minimum is not liable to taxation. This is a just provision.

The countries which practice this system, statistics show, are getting sufficient funds for the proper running of their governments and are rendered able, at the same time, to contribute in various ways toward the progress of their population. Unfortunately this desirable situation does not obtain in Egypt, neither can it so obtain until the capitulations are abolished. The Egyptian people and the Egyptian government, fully realizing this painful, unjust, and unreasonable state of affairs, are appealing for their abolishment. The bulk of the revenue of the Egyptian government is, as stated, derived from the land tax, and from custom duties. Of course there are certain judicial fees, etc., but these only affect particular cases. What a gross injustice it is to these people at a time when everyone is shouting for justice and equality! If Egypt is to have this relief for which her people and her government are crying, one of two things must obtain: Abolishment of the capitulations, which is but just and right, or that the powers holding such rights agree to a just system of taxation of their nationals living and doing business in Egypt, so that the government can thereby adopt the income tax system and otherwise equalize taxation and thus afford needed relief.

Fully appreciating the unjust and baneful effects of these capitulations, I shall fondly hope that the Amer-

ican government and the American people will be the first to renounce what some people call "privileged rights" but what in reality is a gross injustice. I know that the American people as a whole, and, indeed, comparatively few in Congress, appreciate the evils that these extra-territorial rights inflict upon this people, and for the reason assigned and in the name and cause of humanity, I appeal to all in authority to use their good offices to annul them or to otherwise give this needed relief. A visit to Egypt or even a glance at the photos taken of Egypt would prove how necessary this action is to her populace who are descendants of the people of ancient Egypt, who cradled civilization, and whose monuments have proved how advanced and well cultured they were. Their offspring are now working barefooted in the fields, with a simple piece of cloth with which to cover their bodies; uneducated through no fault of theirs, living under most difficult conditions and unhealthy surroundings, because in a very large measure, of this unfair system of taxation; while others living in towns reap the benefit of the hard work of the bulk of the population and pay no taxes, yet live in comfort and luxury, well provided with schools and hospitals, gardens and streets and all the refinements, (except that rare refinement which is associated with the Golden Rule) that could be found in the most up-to-date city in the world.

Again, the prosperity of a country cannot be allowed to depend upon one source of revenue only. No country has progressed with agriculture alone. Industry should and must go together with agriculture if the country is to make progress. It is for this reason that countries have protective tariffs, in other words some kind of tax on goods imported to protect local crops and manufac-

tured products. Otherwise the market will be flooded with imported material that will cripple local industry. This has been the policy of all progressive countries and has proved to be sound and just. The United States of America knows the value of this policy and the laws are framed with this purpose in view. Again, Egypt is helpless. This cannot be done without the united consent of the above-mentioned capitulatory powers. The result is that Egypt depends on agriculture, and the little industry that she has is crippled and discouraged by foreign competition. This phase of the question I have more fully referred to in another chapter. There is many an industry in Egypt that has died a natural death due to this cause alone. As one example, Egypt used to make glass, ceramic tiles, etc., which she is not now doing in the same quantities as before, and for no other reason than that foreign competition has superseded her and the government is rendered powerless by reason of these capitulations to protect her industries.

There are many articles that are imported into Egypt that could easily be made there if the Egyptian government were empowered to do what all the other civilized countries are doing, namely, protect local industries by the same means and methods as those adopted at present by European and American countries.

Before the war, many Eastern nations were suffering from the evils of this regime; but since then Egypt has become almost the sole country which has not been liberated from them. Turkey, as above noted, has received the consent of the powers and has already emancipated herself. China has been given important and sympathetic declarations by the American government for the termination of this system, and I am happy to



state that since the above was written, the nationals of China have been recognized by our government. And the capitulations there held by us will thus be annulled. The other nations holding these rights, (it is believed) will be forced to follow our lead.

Indeed, the whole government mechanism in Egypt is embarrassed and paralyzed by the continual difficulties encountered, arising out of these extra-territorial rights, because any law, tax, or administrative reform, in order to have a territorial effect and produce the results aimed at, must be submitted to the capitulatory powers and secure the consent of their separate governments.

#### SOCIAL EVILS OF THE CAPITULATIONS

An eye-witness of the daily evils of these extra-territorial rights, cannot but admit that much harm is caused under cover of the capitulations. It will be hard to exaggerate the amount of injustice or the hideous administrative confusion arising from this state of things. The immunity often accorded to criminals, under the capitulations, though exceedingly serious and sensational, does not compare for instance, with the obstacles they interpose to every kind of administrative reform and to the general march of progress which have more far-reaching consequences.

Where would the growth of civilization be without the power of creating remedies for new offences? Step by step, as the development of the public conscience condemns certain acts as immoral, or experience shows them to be injurious to the general interest, the legislature follows and makes them punishable. But the capitulations form a solid barrier to this purpose, alike as regards the suppression of vice and the repression of nuisances,

whether it be a question of public morals, such as the closing of gambling-halls and houses of ill-fame, or the control of the sale of narcotic drugs; or a question of public convenience, such as the preservation of a canal bank or the enforcement of the most essential sanitary rules; the same difficulty presents itself. From the prevention of false coinage to the traffic regulation, it is always the same old story.

No doubt the government is free to make the necessary laws; but so long as the penalties contained in them are not applicable to foreigners, what is the use? It would simply be giving a profitable monopoly of lawlessness to the foreigner at the expense of the Egyptian. And in matters of this kind, it is precisely the low-class foreigners with whom the country swarms who are the principal offenders. It is they who are the false coiners, who keep the gambling halls, the liquor shops, and the disorderly houses. The Egyptian courts cannot try them, nor is it certain that their own courts, even if willing, will be competent to do so. For the offences in question are offences by virtue of Egyptian law; but foreigners have the privilege to be tried not only by their own courts but by their own laws, which may possibly have no provision applicable to the case.

It is time that the whole world should agree to the principle of recognizing the complete authority of the Egyptian government over its financial affairs including full power to make territorial laws concerning taxes, which might be levied on all Egyptians and foreigners alike, and thus relieve the Egyptian government of the interminable difficulties, without appealing to all the powers and seeking their consent before any slight modification in the taxes is contemplated.

The independence of the country, as has been previously stated, was recognized in 1922 and a full Parliamentary regime has been instituted (or was until the recent crisis above mentioned) and is in full operation. The Egyptian people are fully alive to the necessity of reconstruction and reform. In education, in public health, in judicial reform, in administration, including the reconstruction of customs laws, the Egyptian parliament and the Egyptian government are not sparing any efforts.

Again, Turkey, from which the capitulation system was inherited by Egypt, has put an end to it, as above pointed out, by the consent of the powers; and its sovereign authority to create territorial laws, affecting all the residents in its dominions, is at present unrestricted. The recognition by the powers of this legitimate and elementary principle of sovereignty should naturally include Egypt. A nation which feels a sense of equality, distrust and injustice inflicted on it by the other foreign powers or their residents living within its territories, is naturally susceptible of manifesting sooner or later its feelings of distrust and hostility.

It would be most exceptional and unjustifiable that Egypt should be singled out and left as the only country which is not in a position to administer laws applicable to its European residents and guests, who number about one hundred sixty thousand out of a population of nearly fifteen millions.

Is it fair that this small minority of foreigners, resident in Egypt, should be allowed to expect the Egyptians to pay for all schemes of reform in which they share the benefit but do not share the expense?

The foreigners who are in Egypt claim between them a large amount of the money and trade of the country

in the form of banks and companies of various kinds. It becomes grossly unnatural that they should not contribute towards government expenses, from the profits which they make in Egypt. This also results in the wealthy class of Egyptians not being taxed in accordance with the amount of their wealth, so long as the same kind of taxes cannot be extended to the foreigners who compete with them. Any scheme of taxation which will discriminate between Egyptians and foreigners will have the effect of penalizing those who pay and placing them in a difficult position, whether in trade or industry, as compared with those who do not so pay.

It is true that foreign land owners, as above pointed out, pay their share in the land tax, but this land tax is adjusted once only every thirty years, which prevents any fair readjustment of the assessment and makes the land tax, as a source of revenue, stagnant, very, very inelastic, and bearing no proportion to the total sum.

In 1912, out of about 5,500,000 feddans (one feddan represents a small fraction more than an acre) owned by about 1,500,000 proprietors, foreigners to the number of 8,079 owned 715,936. In 1925, the number of foreign owners had decreased to 6,596, and the area they possessed was 538,000. That is to say, in about twelve years something more than one-quarter of the area they possessed was handed back to Egyptian proprietors. However, much of this movement is in conformity with the interests of the Egyptian farmer, yet it shows that whatever contribution foreigners used to make in the shape of land tax, such contribution is progressively on the decrease.

The financial side of the capitulation regime has therefore produced in Egypt a system of finance which

is unique in its inequity, in its inelasticity, in its unproductivity and in everything contrary to the known canons of taxation. It has brought about a situation in which the rich do not pay by any means in proportion to their wealth and the peasant class is charged with almost all the burden, and unless this state of things can be duly rectified, it is bound to breed social and political unrest and trouble.

It must be admitted that so many problems of first-class importance and urgency, affecting the very health and condition of the people, cannot be performed on the basis of the present system.

The Egyptians, like Europeans and Americans, need to be educated, and this necessitates money; they need public health improvements and this again requires money. Their roads, their housing conditions and all other aspects of human and material character need and must have adequate revenue if progress is to be made. How can this be done without the creation of taxes in proportion to the capacity to pay, and how can these taxes be raised, if the capitulatory powers continue the oppression which the extra-territorial rights impose?

From all that has been explained of the effects of this most oppressive regime, one can see how the present system of finance in Egypt is in complete opposition to the requirement of modern progress. It prevents the Egyptian government from touching any of the savings of the foreign and Egyptian companies and thus produces a unique system of inequality of treatment. Under this system the Finance Ministers in time of crisis can only depend on a very bad alternative and that is the cutting down of departmental expenses, or the cancelling of schemes which had been decided upon and considered

urgent. It makes it impossible for the treasury to meet the requirements of the country by the institution of such well-known taxes as the income tax, the capital tax, the inheritance tax, the corporation tax, or any other tax which is a common feature in any modern financial system. It stands in the way of developing their municipal and local institutions. It shelters the foreign evil-doers and gives them an unlimited field of lawlessness and thus endangers public security. I think I have made it clear that the existence of the regime is contrary to all rules of progress. Neither the foreign powers nor their nationals resident in Egypt could ever honestly justify such a paralyzing agency.

Should this unjust burden be lifted from this oppressed people, they will be able to appreciate more fully, the words of encouragement and prophecy uttered by the scholarly Britisher, Blunt, in his "Secret History of the English Occupation of Egypt," more than thirty years ago, after their country had been invaded in 1882, by the people of his own country, when he said:

"Yours was the fount of man's first inspiration!  
The well of wisdom whence he earliest drew.  
And yours shall be the flood time of his reason,  
The stream of strength which shall his strength renew.

"Thou shalt not be forsaken in thy children.  
Thy righteous blood shall fructify the earth.  
The virtuous of all lands shall be thy kindred,  
And death shall be to thee a better birth."



## CHAPTER XXII

### THE MIXED COURTS OF EGYPT

HAVING discussed capitulation or extra-territorial rights, I wish now to call attention to another phase of "rights" in Egypt, in which the other powers, both great and small, are interested, and have been since January 1, 1876, taking a most active as well as a most useful part. I refer to the mixed courts, which are, as the term implies, judicial tribunals presided over in part by judges selected by the Egyptian government from other powers, upon the latter nominating at least two candidates from whom a selection may be made.

It might be of interest to refer, briefly, to the history of these courts. They were established under the reign of Ismail Pasha, aided by his wise and sagacious Prime Minister Nubar Pasha, for the benefit of the Egyptian people, as well as foreign nationals residing in Egypt. No ruler, perhaps, has ever been more severely criticised, if not cruelly treated, than this prince, who succeeded his brother, Saïad Pasha, to the throne of Egypt in 1863, and ruled, as heretofore pointed out, until he was forced, through the influence of European powers—especially England—to abdicate in 1879. In going through the files of the American Legation at Cairo, at the time of the semi-centennial celebration of the founding of these courts, I was pleased to see that our consuls general in Egypt, Mr. Hale and Mr. Beardsley, supported this judicial scheme of the Khedive, with all their powers of per-



suasion, and from the records on file, I think it but justice to say that there was no one force outside that exerted by the talented Khedive, and his far seeing and able Prime Minister, which had so much to do with final establishments of these tribunals as the labor, and influence of these two American officials—Hale and Beardsley.

The records further disclose that the first intimation our government had of the scheme to establish such tribunals was in a note addressed to it by the Greek government, on December 22, 1867, wherein was expressed the opinion: "That so important a modification, and one touching so nearly the rights of foreigners in Egypt, seems to be premature, and that there is too much ignorance, too much fanaticism, and abuses too inveterate, obtaining as yet in the indigenous element for it to be called to exercise high judiciary functions." In this same communication the government of Greece urged, too, as a further reason why such courts should not be established, the difference in language: "Another question is," it said, "what language is to be preferred in these tribunals. The Arabic is not understood by the Christians and there is no reason for one of the European idioms to be favored more than another." The reply of our Secretary of State to this note is, I think, interesting. It read: "The questions which it discusses will receive due attention at my hands should they hereafter come to the attention of this Department." A week, however, after the above correspondence took place, our consul general, Mr. Hale, brought to the attention of our State Department, officially, the project of the Khedive and Nubar Pasha, His Prime Minister, as developed by them during the summer of 1867. Our consul general was on

the ground, and knew well the importance of this judicial reform and was not easily dissuaded from pursuing his defense, or advocacy of the project, as was shown later on in his connection with this reform movement.

Not alone had Greece approached our government with a discordant note, but the records disclose that Lord Stanley is reported to have expressed to our Ambassador in London in May, 1868, an opinion which was anything but encouraging. The Ambassador reporting his interview with Stanley says: "His Lordship expressed great doubt whether anything was likely to come of the matter. Neither was he disposed to think the evils of the present system as serious as they had been represented." In spite of these adverse criticisms, the State Department kept an open mind and instructed our consul general to "keep the Department advised of all developments." The records show that the Khedive was fully aware of the friendly, sympathetic attitude of our consul general towards this project, for in January, 1868, His Highness had expressed to him, personally, the hope that the United States would be represented in any conference which might be held to consider this important question. On February 29, following, at the instance, or upon the instruction of the Khedive, the now celebrated report of Nubar Pasha to the Khedive, was sent to Mr. Hale, our consul general, who in turn transmitted it, translated from the Arabic to the English, to the Department of State, with a report of his own on the matter in question, which was both exhaustive and thoroughly sympathetic. At the same time he forwarded with the outline of the fully developed scheme, various criticisms of those who opposed the measure, logically answered by him. In referring in his dispatch, to the criticisms offered

by Europeans, he says: "I doubt whether the large European communities would willingly accept, at present, a measure which should arm any tribunal of the Egyptian government, however composed, with power to touch the persons or property of Europeans otherwise than through their respective consulates." It would appear from the expressions of this wise and able consul general, even at this early period, that he could see the baneful and altogether unjust workings of the capitulations and was anxious to use his good offices to overcome the injustice exercised by, or through, them by having established these mixed courts.

The argument continued, pro and con, until a commission was provided for, and Mr. Hale was requested by the Egyptian government to get the consent of his government to act as its representative on the same. He was duly appointed as our representative on this commission. As to his influence in this council, it is of interest to note the comment of our Ambassador at Constantinople, in 1876, when urging our government to give at once its consent to this project, he said: "I noticed the warmth with which the gentleman, who was the United States consul general in Egypt (Mr. Hale), entered into the original scheme, almost shaping by his counsels the work of the first commission."

I find further evidence of what would seem to be Mr. Hale's desire to overcome or neutralize the capitulations, as far as possible, at any time, in his final report to the State Department of the work of the commission, wherein he says, after explaining that two important questions have been left for future consideration, viz., (1) whether the jurisdiction of the new courts should extend to Franks of different nationalities and (2) should it extend to crim-

inal jurisdiction? He emphatically goes upon record in favor of such a change in the following words: "My opinion is in favor of the more extended jurisdiction in both cases." He recites the most convincing evidence for his views, and closes his dispatch by saying: "If, therefore, you should decide to support the plan of the government as modified, I think that you will not affect injuriously the interests of citizens of the United States resident in Egypt, while you will afford a welcome encouragement to the Khedive in his efforts to effect a desirable reform in a matter of admitted abuse."

Not long after this communication was forwarded to the State Department, Mr. Hale was succeeded by Mr. Beardsley. But he had the great satisfaction, before he left his post, to receive from the State Department, its approval of this project, for which he had worked so industriously. Its approval came by cable and was as follows: "The views expressed by you have the general approbation of this Department. It has great satisfaction in recognizing in the proposition of the Egyptian government, an earnest and intelligent effort to put the administration of justice within its territory upon a basis beneficial and satisfactory as well to foreign residents as to its own subjects."

While the United States government had thus given its approval to the scheme, it was by no means fully an assured accomplishment. But, in this connection it is refreshing to observe that the successor of Mr. Hale, Mr. Beardsley, was no less enthusiastic for the new plan than was Mr. Hale. In one of his dispatches to the State Department, he makes this allusion to the Khedive, Ismail, (the present king's father). "Ismail Pasha succeeded to the Vice Royal Throne on the 18th of January,

1863, bringing to the discharge of his duties, a remarkable knowledge of men and affairs and administrative ability, but seldom witnessed among oriental princes. Since the hour of his succession he has devoted himself with untiring zeal and industry to the internal development of Egypt."

Parenthetically, it must be refreshing to the friends of the present able ruler of Egypt, as well as to the many hundreds of friends of the late Khedive Ismail, to hear, amidst all the calamitous, castigating criticisms which have been heaped unjustly upon the head of this able ruler, such just praise from our representatives and government. Again let me say: It is to be hoped that our government will find a way in the not far distant future to take a leading part in relieving the Egyptian government of the curse of the capitulations. But in its efforts to do so, it should delegate none of our rights now held by us to the British government who claims the right to protect foreigners.

But back to the courts: We find that by the latter part of the year 1872 the scene of action in regard to this reform movement had been switched to Constantinople and our part in the negotiations was handled by Hon. George Boker, our Ambassador to Turkey. And, again, we see our representative championing the rights of the Egyptian government and people. In his dispatch to the Secretary of State, under date of October 1, 1872, he says: "It seems to be unjust that there be any hesitation to permit the Egyptians to take that first step towards self-government which will be the result of an independent judiciary—an institution which forms the basis of human freedom in all civilized countries, and which assures to the citizens, liberty and equality in pre-

cise proportion to the perfection of their legal system." Continuing, and this is most interesting, he says: "My own opinion is that sooner or later all the great powers will agree to permit the Egyptian government to put its legal project into practice, to the great future benefit of a thriving and friendly country, which has so long been restrained in its just political aspirations by the irresistible pressure of foreign nations."

What indeed would our Ambassador have to say, now, if he could know of the "irresistible pressure" that is being used against her today, by a foreign power that has occupied her land and dominated her people for more than forty years? Our Ambassador continues in his just observations as to the situation of the Egyptian people and our duty towards them: "Egypt, he says, is in a way to be coddled to death, or to lose everything like national character by the over solicitous nursing of her too affectionate friends. The Suez Canal has become another bond of closer union and increased care, and the Great Powers are with one another, and amicably wrangle over their protege, in order to induce her to adopt every policy that may be imposed rather than one which she may evolve from her own consciousness of her political and her domestic needs." The Ambassador proceeds to deal sledge hammer blows against the criticisms which have been urged against this reform movement and concludes his dispatch in these words: "I therefore, recommend that the Government of the United States should be the first to do simple justice toward our ancient ally."

"I must not continue this history further for as is well known, the courts were established and functioned to the satisfaction of all parties concerned, so long as the

original protocol was followed. As to the matter of departure from the protocol, I wish to here mention, for it is most apropos, the observation of Sir Henry Elliot, the British Ambassador to Constantinople, in his letter on this question, addressed to Nubar Pasha, the Egyptian Minister of Foreign Affairs, a copy of which was, under date of May 29, 1873, sent to the Washington government. In this note it will be observed, the British ambassador formally accepts, on the part of Great Britain the plan for judicial reform, subject, however, to the condition of avoiding any preponderance of one nationality over another in the selection of judges, whether in constituting the tribunal or in supplying the vacancies that may from time to time occur. Then Sir Henry makes the point in his letter, under reference, that this principle was held to be so essential, not only for the interests of British litigants, but also to secure the new tribunals from any suspicion of partiality, that, to prevent any question of the kind from hereafter arising, "Her Majesty's government have instructed me to intimate that their final acceptance was dependent upon the maintenance of this principle."

Has the British government adhered to this fair and just principle, so well set forth in the beginning, by her ambassador, Sir Henry Elliot? It has not, as we shall show further on. She has not alone failed to adhere to the principle set forth by Sir Henry as imperative, to receive the consent of Her Majesty's government, but she has interfered as well in the selection of candidates nominated at least by one of the Great Powers—the United States. Now let us see, first, as to how well the English have adhered to the principle of "Preponderance of one nationality over another in the selection of

judges." Here is the record, as it stood at the time I left my post in Egypt, July 6, 1927:

JUDGES ON MIXED TRIBUNAL IN CAIRO: Twenty-one in all—three English, two French, two Italian, two Swedish, two Swiss (President and Vice-President) one American, one Russian, one Greek, seven Egyptians.

JUDGES ON MIXED TRIBUNAL IN ALEXANDRIA: Eighteen in all—one Belgian, two Spaniards, one English, one Norwegian, one Holland, one American, one Russian, one Italian, one French, one vacancy (Belgian), one Portuguese, six Egyptians.

JUDGES ON COURT OF APPEAL IN ALEXANDRIA. (Supreme Court): Sixteen in all — three English, one French, one Italian, one American, one Norwegian, one Portuguese, one Belgian, one Greek, President of the Court, six Egyptians.

It will be noted that England has three judges to America's one and twice as many as any other power on the important tribunals in the "Court of First Instance" in Cairo and three times as many such on the Court of Appeal (Supreme Court) in Alexandria. The violation of the principle of the British government as set forth by Sir Henry Elliot, as will be seen has become to the British "but a mere scrap of paper." I took cognizance of this violated principle while I was Minister, by calling attention of my government to the irregularity of this procedure, and was supported by it in my position; and upon instruction from Washington, I called attention of the Egyptian government to the violated principle, but since the matter is now up for further consideration, I do not feel at liberty to comment further than to say that Egypt, in spite of her being a sovereign independent State, has besides this preponderance of judges, a British



judicial advisor. Well, those of us who have watched the workings of the political machinery in Egypt, think this official is somewhat more than an "advisor." The autocratic assumption of power by him and the High Commissioner, which naturally and quite properly belongs to the Egyptian government, was shown when the successor of Judge Tuck, the American judge on the Mixed Court of Appeals (Supreme Court) was to be named. The government at Washington nominated Judge Pierre Crabites, who had long been our judicial representative on the Mixed Court of First Instance, in Cairo, for this position. A man of scholastic attainments, a jurist of recognized ability and integrity and, incidentally, a close relative of the late Chief Justice White of the Supreme Court of the United States. His selection was urged by the State Department and by our consul general at Cairo. The British judicial advisor, "advised" adversely and so Washington was asked to make another nomination, which it finally did, and Judge Jasper Y. Brinton, of Pennsylvania, was selected instead of America's first choice.

That Judge Brinton "fills the bill" with both credit to himself and to his government there remains no question; for he is regarded as the peer of any one of his colleagues; but a tremendous injustice was done Judge Crabites. Indeed a personal injury was inflicted upon him such as will admit of no repair. If perchance the reader might think that I have stated this case too strongly, I may say that while I was on leave of absence in the United States in 1925, Judge Crabites sustained the loss, by accident, of one of his legs below the knee. Upon my return to Cairo and, during the course of our first conversation thereafter, he said: "Mr. Minister, while

the loss of my leg is a keen disappointment to me, it is incomparably less so than the disappointment which came to me, as the result of my being turned down as the successor of Judge Tuck on the Court of Appeals, and I have said as much to the British judicial advisor." As I have indicated, not only was Judge Crabites disappointed, but the government at Washington was likewise so; besides, it was felt when the facts were known, that the British judicial advisor was, in the last analysis, the individual who insisted on the selection of another than Judge Crabites, rather than the Egyptian government. Of course he, the advisor, could and did allege, I understand, that two nominations were required to be made, from which the Egyptian government might make its choice. But why select the man of whom they knew but little, instead of one, who for years, upon the Egyptian bench, had shown himself to be an able jurist, familiar with the rather difficult Napoleon code, able to speak not alone his own tongue, but the French, Spanish and Arabic languages as well? The answer is that the Egyptian government had (and has yet) a British judicial advisor.

Our government's consent was given to the Reform measure two years in advance of the actual consummation of the scheme, and Congress was asked by the President to provide the necessary legal provisions whereby he (the President) could suspend the operation of the act establishing consular jurisdiction in Egypt as soon as he had been furnished satisfactory evidence of the organization of the new tribunals on a basis insuring to Americans in the country the same impartial treatment afforded them under the Consular Courts.

As above noted, the organization was fully completed and the judicial machinery set in motion January 1,

1867, and these new courts began to hear cases on February 27 following, and have continued to do so up to the present.

As showing the extent, or scope, of the work performed by these tribunals, I cannot, I think, do better than to refer the reader to an article, contributed to the *Journal of International Law*, by our able representative on the Court of Appeal, Judge Jasper Y. Brinton, October, 1926.

Judge Brinton in this contribution, calls attention to the efforts of Lord Cromer, the British diplomatic agent and consul general, to eliminate the evils to which he refers above. But, in his efforts to do so, he clung to the traditional British imperialistic method of giving to his government the whip hand over the other powers interested. Cromer's opposition to the transfer of the consular jurisdiction to the mixed courts was based upon his belief that such an extension of what he termed "the international principle" did not harmonize with Great Britain's position of political predominance in Egypt, and that the progress of the country could be "guided far more efficiently by one than by several powers." Of course that government must be the British. The truth of the matter is that all cases, of whatsoever nature or character, should go before the Mixed Courts. It is nothing but a travesty upon justice, for the situation to remain otherwise. This procedure would of itself, very largely neutralize the effect of the iniquitous capitulations and in due course of time, in Egypt as in Turkey, and as I hope very soon in China, Egypt will be able to have her own tribunal—not mixed courts of Egypt, but Egyptian courts presided over by members from her own able bar.

To summarize somewhat, we may observe that Egypt has the mixed courts, the native courts, the various consular courts, and the ecclesiastical courts, the latter having jurisdiction over divorce and marriage, while the consular courts (those whose governments enjoy capitulatory rights) try all their own nationals who become litigants in either civil or criminal cases. When a case is to be tried in an American consular court, the consul selects two American citizens, from a list of some ten or twelve such, which has been approved by the Minister, to sit with him in the trial as advisors. In the event the consul and his advisors agree on a verdict—that is, no one of them dissents from the judgment of the consul, there is no appeal. In case, however, one or both, disagree with him (the consul) an appeal to the Minister may be taken, and the opinion, or judgment, rendered by him is final. I had, during my incumbency in office, some very interesting cases for decision.

One case, however, wherein an appeal was made to me, was, I thought, somewhat out of my jurisdiction, for there obtained no statutory provisions applicable to such a case and no precedent. Indeed, in all the annals of history, I doubt if there is to be found more than one other case, which might be said to be at all analogous to the one in point, and this is the one of which we have a rather full account, recorded in the twenty-ninth chapter of Genesis, which deals with the relation of Laban with his nephew, Jacob, the son of Laban's sister, in connection with his cousin, Rachel, Laban's daughter.

It will be recalled that after Jacob left his father Isaac's house, in Palestine, with the blessing and consent of his father, he journeyed over to Syria, having as his objective point the home of his uncle, Laban. He was in

pursuit of a wife and soon after his arrival, fell in love with beautiful Rachel, and when her hand was asked in marriage, of his uncle, he consented with the understanding that he—Jacob—serve him seven years for her, and to this he agreed. When the time was up, the oriental ceremony was carried on in such fashion as that the elder and sore-eyed sister, Leah, was given him instead of the beautiful Rachel. Of course some argument ensued; but finally a compromise was agreed to, under very trying conditions to Jacob. However, he secured Rachel. The price was high, but his great love for her mitigated the sting of disappointment.

The happenings in the case to which my attention was called, occurred during the summer of 1925, while I was on leave of absence, the chief actor in the drama being the legation archivist, a young Copt of good family, and one of the most dependable of young men. His family, to which this son was much devoted, was of the old-fashioned class, who believed that all courtship and matrimonial arrangements, or engagements, should be conducted by the families of the bride and groom to be. The parents of this young man were anxious that he marry and had been looking about for a suitable companion for him, and in due course, they came to him with the report that they had, they believed, found such for him. He being agreeable, an arrangement was made with the family of the girl for their son, accompanied by his parents and sister, to see the girl in company with her parents. The meeting was held, and the girl was found satisfactory not alone to the young man's parents but to him as well. Matters now progressed rapidly.

Within a few days the contract in marriage was to take place. This program consisted of a feast, held at

the home of the prospective bride at which were bidden two priests, one representing the family of the girl and the other that of the young man, together with the relatives of both families and such intimate friends as the prospective groom might wish to invite. The function of the priests is to see that the contract of marriage is legally drawn and signatures to same properly witnessed. When this is done the prospective groom pays over to these priests, for the girl's parents, a sum of money previously agreed upon (which in this case was \$500) and at the same time delivers such other articles of value as the contract provides. All this had been done and they were now ready for the feast. During this ceremony the proposed bride is permitted to be present, and in this case, when she entered, it was noted that she kept one side of her face covered and appeared to the young man, and also to his parents and sisters, as one smaller in stature than the young lady in whom they were interested. This caused them to keep a close watch upon her, and it was discovered that the young lady they were planning to give him in marriage was minus one eye and was otherwise wholly unsatisfactory to the young man. They were from that moment greatly troubled. This contract for marriage had been signed, the money agreed upon, paid. The discussion as to what course to pursue was immediately taken up by them upon their arrival at their home. It was decided to appeal to the ecclesiastical court. This was done, and the verdict by it was that the proceeding was regular and the contract must stand. An appeal was taken to the higher ecclesiastical body and the hearing in the case was postponed from time to time, until I felt that patience had ceased to be a virtue, when I took a hand in the matter, on the ground that

the plaintiff was a protege of the Legation of the United States of America, and as such I demanded that immediate justice be rendered in the case, which would be, according to the evidence, an annulment of the engagement (they had not yet been married), the return of the money and other articles advanced by the plaintiff.

This demand was in due course acceded to and the young man honorably divorced from all blame. Marriage and divorce will in my judgment, in Egypt, as in Turkey, soon become a matter of civil law. Seldom, very seldom, do you hear of a divorce among the cultured, educated class of Egyptians. I am sure the word "seldom" is the word to use if you compare the divorces among this class in Egypt, either among the Mohammedans or Christians (Copts) with the situation in this respect as it obtains in the United States or England.

With education will come, rather rapidly, a change in the moral, social, and ethical standards of these people, if the heavy hands laid upon them by foreign powers through the capitulations and other usurped, imperial impositions are made to relinquish their grasp.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### VISITORS

I HAD the honor of introducing to His Majesty, the King, many distinguished Americans during my incumbency in office, as Minister. They included United States senators, members of Congress, ex-ambassadors, admirals, authors, bankers, industrialists, etc. In arranging for an audience for any visitor whom I considered of sufficient importance to be presented at Court, I would address a note to His Majesty's Grand Chamberlain requesting an audience at such time as His Majesty might deign to receive us. At the same time I would give a rather brief biographical sketch of the proposed visitor, adding the number of days, or the time, the visitor would remain in Cairo. In due course an answer would be returned naming the date and hour of the audience. This information was then passed on to the interested visitor, and he was apprised also, as to his dress, which would be a silk hat, redingote (sometimes called Prince Albert) striped trousers, patent leather shoes and gray gloves.

Promptly at the time set for the audience, I was always present with my guest. We would be met by the Grand Chamberlain, who, accompanying us to the door of His Majesty would salute the King and announce the presence of the American Minister. The King, standing, would receive us in about the center of the room, and then turning towards his desk would invite us to be seated,



when His Majesty would lead the conversation along lines which he deemed best suited to the occasion. It may be said that His Majesty is adept in making his caller feel at ease and in securing from him important information along the business or professional line followed by his visitor.

I recall well the audience of Judge Elbert H. Gary, the late esteemed president of the board of directors of the United States Steel company. I have reason to believe that this conversation, lasting an hour and a quarter, was mutually interesting and helpful to both parties. Another conversation, marked with greatest interest was on the occasion of the audience between the King and Adolph S. Ochs, publisher and owner of the New York Times, as well as that of John R. Mott, the international secretary of the Y. M. C. A., whom President Wilson denominated the greatest individual factor for good in the world.

Of the many who were thus presented at Court, but two violated ethical behavior, one a man and the other a woman. The latter was presented by Mrs. Howell to Her Majesty the Queen, while the gentleman, an ex-ambassador, was, of course, presented to the King by me.

The woman is bright and capable but I was suspicious that she desired this audience in order that she might report what she had heard, on the occasion, in book or magazine, and I kept putting her off from time to time. Finally I allowed myself to be persuaded by one of her friends, over my better judgment, to ask, or have Mrs. Howell to do so, an audience for her. She did just what I feared she might do, quoted the Queen. The correctness of her quotation is in question. But whether Her Majesty was correctly or incorrectly quoted, it was dis-

tinctly improper to thus make public the conversation of the Queen.

I entertained no such fear as this, as it pertained to the ex-ambassador, but my confidence in him was misplaced. He went from Egypt to Jerusalem and there met the then King of the Hejaz, Hussein. Returning to Paris, he permitted himself to be interviewed and in doing so alleged that both these rulers had made certain political statements to him and quoted them. I did not find myself especially interested as to what observations the King of Hejaz made to him, but I was tremendously interested in his report as to what the King of Egypt had said during the course of the interview with him.

This came to me very unexpectedly late in the afternoon, while perusing the Paris edition of the New York Herald. I was amazed at the declaration attributed to the Egyptian King and, of course, knew it to be an incorrect statement. I at once cabled him through our ambassador at Paris calling his attention to the interview, and requesting him to deny the statement quoted as having come from the King, for, as he well knew, His Majesty had made no such statement. On the following morning at a rather unusual hour for callers, my private secretary announced the First Chamberlain. He was at once shown up to my official apartments and after the usual amenities, he said: "Mr. Minister have you seen . . . ?" Without waiting for him to complete his interrogation, for I knew him well and anticipated his question, I said: "Yes, I have seen and have already taken action. You refer to the interview given out in the Paris edition of the New York Herald by so and so?" He said: "Yes, we are much concerned over the matter. Parliament is in session and it is liable to

raise some disturbance." I replied that unless the ambassador denied the part of the interview relating to the King, I would do so over my own signature, in the same paper in which the interview appeared; and that in the meantime, if it were deemed necessary, I would issue a statement to the effect that the King had said nothing during the audience that could, by any reasonable interpretation, convey the meaning attributed to him. This cleared the atmosphere for the time. Later in the day I received a cable from our friend in Paris, in which he said that, while the reporter who interviewed him in the matter under reference had improved somewhat on his language, the statement was not far from what was said. At once I wired the editor of the paper in Paris, through our Embassy, denying over my own signature the statement attributed to the King. The matter was thus satisfactorily adjusted. I do not think that the gentleman in question meant to precipitate trouble but rather wanted to give the impression that he was still able to procure audiences with kings and if necessary advise them in matters of statecraft.

.

## CHAPTER XXIV

### THE CLIMATE OF EGYPT

THE climate of Egypt is, I think, not generally well understood. Most people are under the impression that it is an exceedingly hot and dusty region as well as a most insanitary one, where the traveler is subjected to all sorts of risks or dangers from the various infections and contagious diseases.

The fact is that from the middle of October to the 10th of June, with the exception of a few days in May and, perhaps an equal period in June, it is almost ideal. Even after the hot days of May and June, the nights are cool, especially if a sleeping porch is available. This was taken advantage of at the Legation and I do not recall a single night passed there after the heated days, but what a blanket was required for comfort before the morning hours.

After June 20, the King with his Ministry, removes to the summer capitol at Ramleh, Alexandria, on the coast of the Mediterranean Sea, and the diplomatic corps follow suit. Ramleh is removed from Alexandria proper some six miles, on a decided elevation, and, while there is found some humidity which gives a few people an opportunity to complain, yet by being properly located with an exposure to the sea, one never needs to perspire. In the afternoon, from five o'clock on, the temperature is ideal there. I do not recall a single evening spent at the Hotel Casino San Stefano, in Ramleh, during the heated

term, from the latter part of June to the last of September, but when riding in a carriage, as was our custom in the evening, an extra top coat was not required for comfort. How different this fact appears to be from the impression which seems to prevail throughout many countries, including my own. I recall a little sally or joke which was indulged in by one of the society writers on one of our Dayton papers during the heated term of the summer of 1921, before I left for my post the following fall.

The weather there was indeed torrid, and this observing writer "from her window" (where all her observations were supposed to have been noted) made the point that the temperature had never been known to be higher, and that she had observed that I had adopted a summer attire which seemed ideally appropriate for the scorching rays, and from all appearances the sun god was preparing me for the ordeal with which I would need to contend at my post. She further observed that all Dayton was desirous of having me especially well equipped for my arduous tasks, but that really she could see no just reason why the whole Miami Valley should be thus punished in order that one of her honored sons might be prepared for the burning rays of the Egyptian sun.

The mean monthly temperature during the winter months of December, January, and February for Alexandria is 57.4 Fahrenheit, while in Cairo during the same period it is slightly cooler, the mean temperature being 54.5 Fahrenheit. An overcoat, one even fur-lined, when riding at night during December, January, and February, adds to one's comfort. As we go south along the Nile, we find the temperature rising. For instance, at Aswan, four hundred and eighty miles south of Cairo, we

find the winter temperature varying from 74.3 to 48.4 Fahrenheit with a mean temperature during this period of 61.3 degrees Fahrenheit. At Luxor, or ancient Thebes, but two hundred forty miles south of Cairo, the temperature is even more agreeable, perhaps, during November, December, January, and February. Indeed, many tourists prefer the weather conditions of Luxor and Aswan during the months named, to those found in Cairo.

While on the subject of climate, I shall take time to deal with another important matter and that is the question of drinking water. Tourists, it is alleged by them, are told that the drinking water in Egypt is questionable and that the only safe practice for them is to use the bottled water of various springs. This they are led to believe, and consequently are sold bottled water at enormously high price. The fact is, the filtered Nile water is as fine as is to be found anywhere, and the laboratories of the Department of Health are constantly on the alert to keep it so.\* There are no malaria or typhoid fever cases in Cairo or Alexandria, except sporadic cases, where individuals have contracted the germ at some other point and the stage of incubation has been completed in these cities. The hospitals in Cairo and Alexandria, both private and public, are of the very best, and the medical and surgical men on the staffs of same will compare favorably with those of any other country.

In speaking of poisonous snakes and other reptiles, I may observe that during my six years of official life in Egypt, I never saw a snake or other reptile, except those "professionally" handled by a snake charmer at Luxor. So from any human stand point the traveler may visit

---

\*I am sorry to relate as heretofore indicated that no such safe precautions are to be found in the villages where live the fellah.

this wonderful land, the cradle of civilization, with the minimum amount of risk and danger, and enjoy, as indicated, the most delightful climate in the world.

Should one feel, however, that a complete change of air, scenery, and people are desirable, this may be had within a period of twenty-four hours by taking the train from Cairo to Kantarah, changing there to the Palestine railroad, and proceeding directly to Haifa. By taking advantage of a splendid automobile agency, one may proceed to the Lebanon mountains, visiting on the way the famous Acre, the once historic capital of Syria—Tyre. Here lived King Hiram, the friend of David and Solomon, who so generously lent every aid to Solomon in the preparation of the timbers required for the building of his temple at Jerusalem; the timber secured, it will be recalled, from the Cedars of Lebanon. Sidon which is near Tyre, a city of some size and importance, is situated in one of the most fertile spots of Syria, in the center of the region of the silk industry. One proceeds until Beirut, the new Syrian capital, is reached, where the American University, the greatest seat of learning in the Near East, is located.

Then one may continue on his journey to the Lebanon mountains, either by train or automobile. The latter means of transportation is the more desirable, both from the stand point of comfort and scenic beauty, until any desired point in the mountains is reached. I may here add that I, together with many tourists, or summer sojourners, have found that Sofar, on the Beirut and Damascus highway, situated some four thousand feet above sea level and in sight of the snow-capped mountains, affords an ideal spot for rest and recreation. Here is located, too, a splendidly appointed hotel, the Ain-Sofar,

run by well-educated and splendidly disposed Syrians. From this point you may visit Damascus, Aleppo, Antioch, Palmyria, the Cedars of Lebanon, Baalbek, and other places of interest, returning to the hotel from all but the most distant points on the same day.

According to mythology and tradition, Baalbek is considered one of the most ancient cities of the world. All the nations, particularly the Arabs, who took possession of it, suppose that it dates from time immemorial. According to their legends, Adam and the patriarchs inhabited the country around Baalbek and they believed that Adam inhabited Damascus and died at Zebandani; that Abylene was the scene of the murder of Abel, whose name it preserves; that Noah was buried at Karak-Nooh and his son at Ham, a town in Anti-Lebanon, three hours from Baalbek. The same legends tell how Cain built Baalbek as a place of refuge after Jehovah had cursed him. Estfan Dewaihi, the Maronite patriarch, speaks of Baalbek in the following terms:

"Tradition states that the fortress of Baalbek, on Mount Lebanon, is the most ancient building in the world. Cain, the son of Adam, built it in the year 133 of the creation during a fit of roving madness. He gave it the name of his son, Henek, and peopled it with giants who were punished for their iniquities by the flood."

It may readily be understood how those who ruled Egypt, Syria, and Palestine, both as independent nations, and as subjects of Greece, Rome, Persia, and other powers in other days, were really all sufficient unto themselves in the matter of happy climatic conditions.

Just across the border from both Egypt and Syria, we have Palestine, with its towering mountains and magnificent plains; with its snows in winter, and its ever tropical



climate at Joppa, and on the Sea of Galilee, at which latter place, Herod, and other Roman rulers, or leaders, had their winter homes. It was in the palace of Herod, on this best known (historically) body of water in the world, that, through the blandishments of a woman and the physical effect of too much wine—both nearly always associated with crime—was enacted the greatest injustice that was ever perpetrated against the best man, save one, ever born of woman, when John the Baptist, the cousin of Christ, was sentenced to death without a single witness being heard in his defense; and only to satisfy the whim of his wife, Herodias, who had been previously married to his brother, Philip (Matthew, Chapter 14).

It is of interest to note, that in and about this Sea of Galilee, or Gennesaret, lived the Christ in the beautiful hills and mountains about Nazareth, and it was in and around, and about this water that the greatest number of His Apostles were selected, and His most famous miracles were performed.

But I started in this chapter to discuss the climate of Egypt, and not Syria and Palestine. Physically, however, as well as in mental vision, it is so easy to cross the borders from one to the other of these adjacent countries, all so fascinatingly interesting from every human, as well as sacred standpoint, that it may not prove disappointing to the reader to have recorded these facts here. I must confess that, while I have personally visited these points many times, they grow more and more interesting to me with each succeeding visit.

Now, back to Egypt for a few more observations on climate, etc. Just northeast of Cairo, about six miles, accessible by automobile or interurban cars running

every few minutes, is the famous city of Heliopolis, noted for its splendid winter climate, and its magnificently appointed hotels, (one of which ranks among the finest in the world). It is the site of the ancient Egyptian University, where Moses, the adopted son of Pharaoh, and Joseph, who by his manly accomplishments of both head and heart, became the Secretary of the Exchequer and custodian of all personal and financial matters pertaining to the King's interests, were, probably, educated. It will be recalled that it was Moses who gave to us the foundation principles of religion, law, sanitation, morals and dietetics. And, be it said to his credit, they have been found so fundamentally correct and so practical that comparatively little improvement has been found possible.

Through this famed city and seat of learning Joseph and Mary passed and tarried for a while on their way to Cairo, or Babylon, as it was then called. As I have heretofore pointed out, here stands an obelisk upon which the eyes of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob have looked, reading perhaps as they did, its inscriptions and hieroglyphics. What memorable events these landmarks call to our minds. One should not fail to visit this historical place.

Then if one desires to be quiet and enjoy the delights of the desert, no place is more desirable than the Mena House at the Pyramids, or the Hotel at Heluan.

The Mena House is located about seven or eight miles from Cairo, to the West, standing within almost a stone's throw of the Great Pyramid, "Cheops," and on the verge of the Libyan Desert. Here one may enjoy the delights of the desert on horseback or indulge in any one of the games to which his fancy may incline. The temperature

here during the months of December, January, February, and March, is from one to three degrees lower than that found in Heluan, and is about the same as that found in Cairo, in February and in March. The fine, bracing desert air, the cloudless sky, warm sun, and unsurpassed hotel accommodations, including a splendid orchestra and dancing three times a week, make this place an ideal one in which to write, read, or rest during at least a part of the winter months.

Automobile travel may not be regarded as the best for great distances, after one leaves Cairo, or Alexandria, although the road is fair for such travel as far south as Luxor and quite good between Cairo and the Faiyum. The province of Faiyum is a splendid agricultural state, located about a hundred and thirty-five miles southwest of Cairo. However, as indicated, Luxor and Aswan may be reached by well-appointed trains, and too, by way of the Nile, on sumptuous passenger steamers running at regular intervals to and from Cairo.

Dahabiyeh, privately operated steamers, are also available for those who are able to afford the renting of one (and there are many Americans traveling in Egypt who are in this class). One may thus be surrounded by the members of his own family, or such friends as he may wish to invite, and with a competent guide (and such are usually available) may visit the various tombs and places up and down the Nile as far south as Aswan or Wadi Halfa.

While referring to guides, I wish to call attention to the fact that many of them are unreliable and, more, they are not to be trusted with women visitors who are alone. Not that they are more lecherous or untrustworthy than men who follow such callings in other coun-

tries; indeed, I think they are not so, but women should not take trips alone in desert places with them. My official attention was called to a number of very embarrassing experiences which came to women visitors due to their over-confidence in their "adorable guides." These dragomen should not be permitted to ride in the automobile or carriage with visitors, except on the seat with the driver, and at no time should ladies permit themselves to be led to any part of the desert or tombs without proper escort. Then, too, these dragomen are as a rule, not to be trusted in the matter of aiding the tourist in his purchases. They have a complete understanding with certain unreliable merchants whereby they are to profit to the extent of from ten to twenty percent on all articles purchased by the tourists. I have known Americans to purchase "scarabs" represented—"guaranteed to be genuine," at a cost of twenty-five dollars, that were gross frauds and not worth five cents. There are several reliable Egyptologists in and about Cairo and Luxor, any of whom will be able to furnish the traveler with names of reliable dealers.

Then another great source of annoyance to tourists when visiting the various places in Egypt—such as the Pyramids, the tombs, and the museums, etc.—is the horde of beggars which are always in evidence, crying with their hands outstretched: "*Back-shish, Mister! Back-shish!*" Although repeatedly told to do so, they will not leave you even though you use the harsh command: "*Yallah kawn*" (Get away and be quick about it.) These beggars ply their trade, not because they are hungry, or in need of the necessities of life, but rather, for the reason that they have been taught to do so by their elders, many times so taught by their parents.

Then, too, they have been given to understand that all tourists, especially Americans, are millionaires and are therefore proper prey for them.

I take it that these observations will be read by many Egyptians who are interested in having tourists visit their country; indeed, there obtains in Cairo, an organization whose business it is to encourage this important source of revenue and I wish to emphasize the necessity of making for the tourist, every possible convenience, not alone in the matter of hotel and train accommodations, but in seeing to it that reliable, intelligent guides be provided, and just as important, that the horde of beggars and hangers-on, to be found about the various sites of interest, are eliminated.

Heluan is situated seventeen miles southeast of Cairo, in the desert, three miles from cultivatable land, at an elevation of some one hundred fifteen feet above the Nile. Here the tourist may enjoy the bracing atmosphere of the desert, constant sunshine and a temperature, during the winter months, ranging from 67 degrees Fahrenheit from the first of December until the last days of February. In March the temperature does not exceed 76 Fahrenheit. Here are located hot springs, from which issue sulphur water. This water is turned to good account by its utilization in the magnificently equipped bath houses. The hotels at this suburban resort are splendidly appointed and are in every way satisfactory.

Trains run to and fro from Cairo to Heluan every thirty minutes. Heluan is also accessible by automobile over a macadamized road.

## CHAPTER XXV

### EDUCATION

HAVE, when recounting the accomplishments of the present King of Egypt, spoken at some length of His Majesty's untiring efforts to relieve the larger number of his people of benighted ignorance, and how the new Parliament had already drafted a law of compulsory education. I now wish to allude briefly to the contribution which has been made to education in Egypt by American men and women backed up as they have been by money contributed by my countrymen. I am proud, distinctly proud, of their work, their precepts and their examples. It was a source of pride and satisfaction to me upon entering upon my duties as Minister, to note that these men and women educators, after having been with the leading Mohammedan people for more than sixty years, had their complete confidence. As showing the extent of this educational work here and in process of its further accomplishment, I cannot do better than to append the following article, which I recently contributed, under date of October 13, 1927, to the "United Presbyterian," the church paper of the United Presbyterian denomination, at the instance of one of the leaders of their church body:

"I have been requested to contribute an article on my impressions of missionary work in Egypt, during my tenure of official life there, as Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States from the

fall of 1921 until the date of my recent resignation, July 6, 1927.

"Apropos of my observations thus made, I may properly observe: That my first visit to the 'Near East,' including Egypt, was in 1911, as a tourist, when I traveled with three very distinguished clergymen, all occupying pulpits of the first rank in America, and with a high churchman and philanthropist, and we did not fail to make careful appraisal of this work, under reference, at that time. Pleased as all of us were with the work then being carried on by this noble band of missionary workers, I was able, upon my return in 1921, ten years after the visit in question, to note great progress in this work, which was started under the auspices of the United Presbyterian Church of North America about sixty-five years ago.

"It would appear but natural for the student of history to be intensely interested in Egypt and her people, past and present; for that this land was the cradle of civilization there remains, I think, no doubt in the minds of historians.

"The excavations that have been carried on here by archaeologists for the past twenty-five years, more particularly those of recent discovery, together with other historical data or events, prove this to be true. I should like to dilate on this phase of the subject, as it has to do with the religious beliefs and customs of those who lived fifteen hundred years before the birth of our Lord, but space will not permit of such a discussion. Suffice it to say, that it was one of the Egyptian kings—Akhnaton, father-in-law of Tut-ankh-Amen—who was among the first known monotheists who wrote verse closely allied to the Psalms of David, extolling God, the Creator and

Maker of all things; and this many hundreds of years before the birth of the psalmist, David.

"We are reminded that it was in this land that Abraham and Sara, his wife, received material help and succor from the Egyptian Pharaoh soon after their arrival from Mesopotamia. We are likewise reminded that this was the birthplace of that most remarkable general, law-giver, and patriot, Moses, as well as his eloquent brother, Aaron, and their gifted and beautiful sister, Miriam. Likewise was it the adopted home of Joseph, and afterward of his father, Jacob, and his brethren. And later on it was this land which gave protection to Joseph, Mary, and the infant Jesus, our Lord, when Herod at Jerusalem was seeking His life.

"I recite briefly this history to call attention to the prominence that this land and these people have occupied in the distant past; and, without going into the 'whys and wherefores,' to state: that they have lost much of that which, in the days to which I have alluded, made them great (conspicuous) as the result of their extraordinarily high state of civilization.

"It required, therefore, if this fourteen million of people were to be lifted up from, and out of, benighted ignorance and superstition into which they had drifted, that help be afforded in the manner such as has been extended them by the educators and missionaries of this church to which I have above referred.

"As I now recall the history of this noble band of men and women who volunteered, under the guidance of this Christian denomination, to devote their lives to this cause, it was about 1860 when the first school was opened in the capital of Egypt, Cairo, for the carrying on of this general educational uplift of these people. It



was not all discouragement even from the incipience of their task; for, so soon as the Egyptian ruler, Khedive Ismail, the father of the present king, was fully made acquainted with the object of their mission, he gave them encouragement in the way of some material aid. But the prejudice to their work and aims, owing to ignorance of those with whom they were obliged to deal, rendered success, for a time, problematical.

"As above noted, they established their first church and school in Cairo, in the elite district of this great city, less than a half block from the well known Shephard's hotel, and then soon gradually began to expand, until today churches and schools are to be found successfully operating in about three hundred towns and hamlets in the fourteen provinces of the country.

"A hospital at Assiut, directed by an able staff of physicians and surgeons, has been operating for many years. The material equipment of this hospital, however, is not what it should be today. A modern building, with all necessary accessories, should be provided. I am sure if this noble church organization and others who are in sympathy with the splendid work here carried on by them, and who are philanthropically inclined, could view this hospital situation as I have seen it, relief along the lines suggested would soon be forthcoming.

"In this same city, Assiout, is located the American College, founded by this Christian organization, the United Presbyterian Church, about 1865. This institution of learning was begun in an abandoned building, after certain requisite repairs were added, and has made since that time, in all the circumstances, most remarkable strides in material equipment and scholastic attainments of its student body; until their landed estates and build-

ings for schools, including the Pressly Memorial Institute for Girls, totals several hundred thousand dollars. The two campuses contain forty acres, with buildings, and general equipment of same, which would do credit to Pennsylvania or Ohio.

"Three years ago, I had the honor of laying the corner stone of the new dormitory building for girls at the Pressly Memorial Institute, which is now complete and filled with girls who are becoming tremendous assets to their country.

"The matriculants of these schools, boys and girls, number approximately one thousand two hundred.

"Think of what a benediction these institutions, alone, operating for three-score years, have already been to Egypt; then contemplate the fact, as already pointed out, that splendid schools have been instituted all over Egypt by this church body.

"I should like to make mention, also, of the outstanding work that is being carried on by the American Girls' College in Cairo—a model institution, now being patronized by the first families of the entire country and filled to its utmost capacity with girls of high social rank.

"Of equal importance, though covering a more restricted line of work, are the mission schools for girls and boys at Luxor, Faiyum, Alexandria, and other cities and towns up and down the Nile Valley.

"I have only spoken briefly, so far, of the work carried on directly under the auspices of the United Presbyterian Church; but I desire to say just a word regarding the American University, established six years ago by Dr. Charles R. Watson, the worthy son of Dr. Andrew Watson, one of the early missionaries sent by this same church to Egypt. The success of this institution, from

every standpoint, under the presidency of this scholarly, Christian gentleman and his able assistant, Dr. Robert McClenahan, and their well selected staff, has truly been phenomenal.

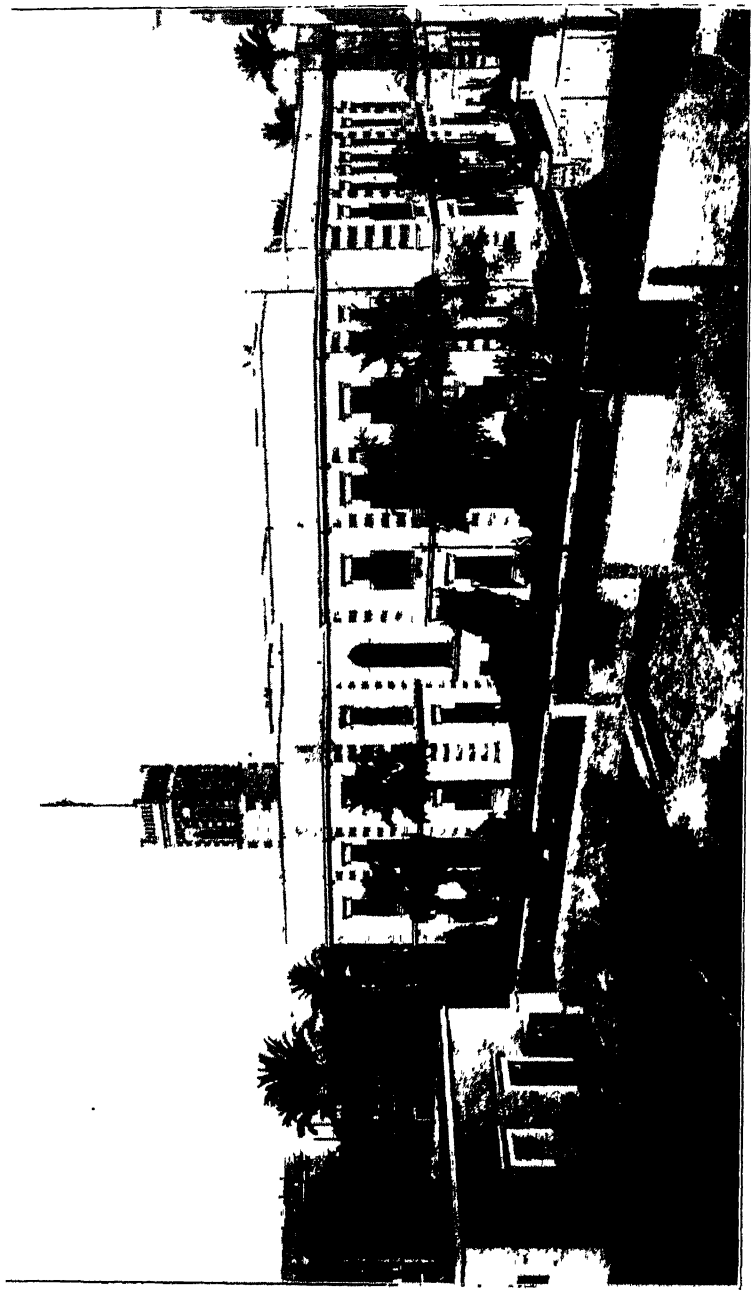
"Is it to be wondered at, therefore, that when you meet persons, both men and women, of Egyptian nationality who have the air of Americans and who speak, as well, the English language, and ask of them where they learned to speak the language used by Americans, they at once rise to their full height and reply: 'Sir, I received my education at the American College at Assiut, or the American school at Luxor, Alexandria,' etc. All of this, you may say, is very well, but what of their morals, their social equipment, their ability to give better account of themselves as citizens, fathers and mothers, sons and daughters, by reason of these educational advantages?

"My answer is that here is where they score, and the work in question is so worth while.

"In conclusion, if those who are interested wish to know how these earnest, efficient, Godly men and women are conducting their work from a strictly religious viewpoint, I would advise them to read the little book, 'The Christ of the Indian Road,' by E. Stanley Jones."

Apropos of the work and influence of the American College, of Assiut, I wish to add the observations of some well-known Americans, as well as leading educators from other countries. But first let me say that the president of this institution, a man forty-seven years old, is C. P. Russell, Ph.D., LL.D., B.A., Hastings College; M.A., Princeton University; Ph.D., University of Chicago; LL.D., Hastings College, who is ably assisted in his work by a faculty of men, Americans and natives, who are





PREPARATORY DEPARTMENT, ASSIUT COLLEGE

well-known for their scholastic ability, wisdom, and fidelity to the work in which they are engaged.

### APPRECIATIONS OF ASSIUT COLLEGE

"Ye Shall Know the Truth and the Truth Shall Make  
You Free."

"The College of the American Mission at Assiut is a wonderful institution and is doing the largest work of its kind in the country.

"J. A. SPENDER,

"British Statesman and Publicist."

---

"For half a century the American Mission has been educating Egyptian boys of all creeds and of different classes of society and thus has been helping largely in raising the level of moral as well as mental education in Egypt. I have been intimately acquainted with Assiut College and its work for many years and have been deeply appreciative of its ideals and influences as have other Egyptians, both Moslems and Christians.

"TEWFIK DOSS PASHA,

"Egyptian Minister of Agriculture."

---

"I have visited some one hundred five of the highest educational institutions on the Mission field, but, taking all things into consideration, Assiut College ranks first, or nearly first, among them all in its emphasis and practice of the manly Christian life.

"HARLAN P. BEACH,

"Yale University."

---

I have visited few institutions which have impressed me so favorably as has Assiut College. It has accom-

plished a wonderful work and ranks among the very leading educational and missionary institutions of the world.

"JOHN R. MOTT."

---

As I have pointed out in the article above, these missionary educators had, from the start, help from the Khedive—Ismail. Not only has the spirit of religious tolerance grown as the years have gone by, but much of financial and moral support has been given by the Egyptians to these men and women who are thus engaged in lifting these people to a higher and better understanding of life and its objects to be attained.

Mohammedan boys and girls, as well as those of the Copts, of the best families, are sent to these various schools of learning and are paying their way.

As showing a charitable and beautiful spirit, I recall only last year, when the corner stone of the auditorium of the American University was laid, it was His Excellency Nessim Pasha, of the King's Palace, representing His Majesty, who officiated at this ceremony. At the commencement exercises of all these institutions it is frequently a Mohammedan member of the cabinet who delivers the class address, and he will have among his hearers, on the front seats, princes, members of the cabinet, and professors from Azhar University, (an institution founded in 988 A.D., the chief seat of learning for the Mohammedan world, with five hundred and eighty-seven professors—sheikhs—and a student body numbering at this time about fifteen thousand). How do these evidences of amity and fraternalism, which here obtain between our Mohammedan brethren and the Christians, compare with the same situation existing, for



DR. CHARLES R. WATSON  
President of the American University of Cairo







instance, in America, between the Roman Catholics and the Protestants? I think the reader will agree with me that the spirit of amity, charity, tolerance, and good will is with the Mohammedans and Christians of Egypt.

I frequently visited this great institution, Azhar, and was always treated with the utmost courtesy. While speaking of the spirit of those connected with this popular seat of learning, I recall a matter which was brought to my attention by one of its leading teachers, after discussing with me at the Legation one day the arrangements to admit a large number of American Marines, as visitors. He said, "Now, Mr. Minister, I should like to mention to you a matter which has given me some annoyance," and then he related to me the fact (and it was a fact, admitted by the chief actor of the incident), that one of the American missionaries, naming him, (who, by the way, was, or is, not a Presbyterian, nor is he connected with any of the American schools) in his enthusiasm to spread the Gospel of his faith among those who held somewhat different religious views, had upon several occasions, when visiting the University, pulled from a well-filled pocket in his coat, religious tracts in which the tenets held by those of the Mohammedan faith were severely criticised, and those of his own faith extolled. He added that Reverend \_\_\_\_\_ had been requested on two different occasions not to continue this practice, but that within the past few days, while going about the University grounds, in company with another visitor of some prominence, he was found repeating this habit. I was asked if I would not use my good offices to have him (Reverend \_\_\_\_\_) discontinue this means of spreading his doctrine among the student body. I replied that I thought his grounds for complaint were

just and reasonable and that I would talk to the gentleman in question about the matter and I felt that after having done so the practice would be discontinued. I had, as a matter of fact, been previously apprised of this last incident, by "the gentleman visitor of some prominence," who by the way, had expressed himself to me as being "dumbfounded" at the spirit of tolerance of these people, in thus permitting this practice. Soon after this complaint I met the reverend gentleman (who, by the way is a great preacher, but not, as above indicated, always tactful) and asked him to discontinue his tract distribution on the Mohammedan University grounds, as it was giving offence, both to the sheikhs and to the students. I then added that those in authority there were not inclined to bar him as a visitor, but upon the other hand they had expressed to me a desire to have him continue his visits. Since he both understood and spoke the Arabic language, they were glad to have him listen to the professors during class recitations, as well as to lectures delivered by the sheikhs to the students. My American preacher friend agreed with me that the criticism was well taken, and that no more tracts would be distributed there.

This ancient University, the oldest virile one extant today, adheres largely to the practices, customs, and curriculum as they have obtained for many centuries. It seems odd, indeed, to the student and traveler of the Occident to see the students during their recitations sitting on straw mats spread upon the floor, while the professor occupies a stool or chair in the midst of them during the discourses upon any subject under consideration.

There have been made within the past few years, some changes along the lines above mentioned, and in my

judgment more are due to follow within the next few years. Apropos of these changes, reference may be made to the magnificent building of a branch of the University at Zagazig, the capital of the "land of Goshen," the home of the Jews during their sojourn in Egypt for four hundred thirty years. Here they have beautiful up-to-date recitation rooms, dormitories for boys, bath rooms, etc. The complete curriculum at Azhar covers a period of seventeen years and, if the student at the end of this period is able to pass the final examination, he receives his diploma, which is a guarantee of his ability to teach in this, or any other university or school in the Mohammedan world. The curriculum embraces: First, preparatory studies—syntax, grammar, rhetoric, logic, the art of poetry, algebra, arithmetic, and the proper method or mode of reciting tradition; Second, theology, jurisprudence, the teaching of traditions, mathematics, geography and astronomy. Some additional subjects, I am told, have recently been added. The student may enter the University or its branches, without cost to himself, as instruction is free. The University is supported by heavy endowments and they are under the control of the Minister of Wahfs, a member of the King's cabinet. The income at this time from the endowments I am told, exceeds somewhat the sum of \$150,000, in cash annually, besides bread and other provisions, furnished daily, which represent an annual addition of another \$100,000. (Twenty-five thousand loaves of bread alone are furnished the Cairo University each day.)

The American University, at Cairo, operating under the presidency of Dr. Charles R. Watson, is centrally and beautifully situated, and its matriculants come from the best families of Egypt. The fine Christian spirit

manifested by Doctor Watson and his co-workers at this institution, has earned for them the confidence of all the people of Egypt; and this seat of learning, in my judgment, will in the not far distant future, surpass that of any like institution in the Near East along lines of moral and educational uplift. It is of interest in this connection to state that, this university is inter-denominational.

## CHAPTER XXVI

### FUTURE OF EGYPT

**T**AKING into careful account all that we have said in the preceding chapters, I think the reader will agree with me when I say that the future of Egypt is problematical and must, therefore, be treated, from a prognostic standpoint, with that degree of uncertainty warranted by its history for the past two thousand years. For is it not true of a country, as with an individual, that to properly judge what the future may be the past record must be taken into careful account?

Such a review of Egypt as we have tried honestly to portray, evidences various and varied results. That in some, many respects, she has led in art and the sciences all the other peoples of the world, there would seem to be no question; that she, from the earliest historical date has been a supporter of education, there remains no doubt. It is not, however, maintained by any known historian that the system of education was of an extended character, or so arranged as to benefit the masses. But rather provide for the accommodation of the official and "notable" classes.

It was in Egypt that the first university of which we have any knowledge was located, and of which Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob may have served as members of the Board of Trustees. I have sometimes thought, indeed I think it most probable, that it was, as I have heretofore stated, at the Heliopolis University that Joseph, the son of

Jacob, was educated, as was also Moses. It will be recalled that Joseph, fortunately, as it proved to be, fell into the hands of the Egyptians when but seventeen years of age, and soon thereafter became the overseer of the estate of Potiphar, a noted, or important official of the Egyptian king, Amenophis IV. The history of this young man develops that by maintaining his moral integrity, and adhering to all those requisites necessary for the development of a symmetrical manhood, he came into power in Egypt, second only to that of Pharaoh himself. It was essential that for him to fill such a responsible position, as he so successfully did fill, he possess a thorough education; and, as indicated, it was the most natural thing for him to take advantage of this Heliopolis University. Is it not reasonable to conclude that in after years he should be followed, along educational lines, by outstanding members of his race, such as Moses, Aaron and probably Solomon, Absalom and many others?

Might it not have been from the teaching of the antecedents of these men—Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob—that Akhnaton conceived his very pure monotheistic ideas, which caused him to divorce himself from the worship of the many gods of Thebes and erect a new capital at El Amarna, located on the Nile, one hundred sixty miles south of Cairo, where for the first time in the history of Egypt, a theology was taught which recognized but one God, the Creator and Maker of all things? Arthur Weigall, an Egyptologist of marked and generally recognized ability, says in his book, "The Life and Times of Akhnaton, Pharaoh of Egypt," on page 166: "Akhnaton believed that his God was the Father of all mankind, and that the Syrian and the Nubian were as much under his protection as the Egyptian. The religion of the Aton

was to be a world religion. This is a greater advance in ethics than may be at once apparent; for the Aton thus becomes the first deity, who was not tribal or not national, ever conceived by mortal mind. This is the Christian's understanding of God, though not the Hebrew conception of Jehovah. This is the spirit which sends the missionary to the uttermost parts of the earth, and it was such an attitude of mind which now led Akhnaton to build a temple for the Aton in Palestine, possibly at Jerusalem itself, and another far up in the Sudan."

As of further interest to the reader showing the character of these Egyptians, especially the Pharaoh under reference, I wish to note the similarity of his (Pharaoh's) hymns, with the hymns (Psalms) of David. In this connection it is worthy of note to remember that the "hymns" of Akhnaton were written, probably, early in his reign, which was for a period of seventeen years, 1375-1358 B. C., while the Psalms of David were written when he was king of the Jews, about 1045 B. C. It will thus be seen that the hymns of Akhnaton (Amenophis IV.) preceded the Psalms of David more than three hundred years.

### AKHNATON'S HYMN

The world is in darkness like the dead. Every lion cometh forth from his den, all serpents sting. Darkness reigns.

When thou risest in the horizon . . . the darkness is banished. . . Then in all the world they do their work.

All trees and plants flourish . . . the birds flutter in their marshes. . . All sheep dance upon their feet.

### PSALM CIV

Thou makest the darkness and it is night, wherein all the beasts of the forest do creep forth. The young lions roar after their prey; they seek their meat from God.

The sun riseth, they get them away, and lay them down in their dens. Man goeth forth unto his work, and to his labour until the evening. The trees of the Lord are full of sap, . . .



The ships sail upstream and down stream alike. . . . The fish in the river leap up before thee; and thy rays are in the midst of the great sea.

How manifold are all Thy works! . . . Thou didst create the earth according to Thy desire—men, all cattle, . . . all that are upon the earth. . . .

Thou hast set a Nile in heaven that it may fall for them, making floods upon the mountains. . . . and watering their fields. The Nile in heaven is for the service of the strangers, and for the cattle of every land.

Thou makest the seasons. . . . Thou has made the distant heaven in order to rise therein, . . . dawning, shining afar off, and returning.

The world is in Thy hand, even as Thou has made them. When thou has risen they live; when Thou settest they die. . . . By Thee men liveth.

wherein the birds make their nests. . . . The high hills are a refuge for the wild goats.

Yonder is the sea, great and wide, wherein are . . . both small and great beasts. There go the ships.

O Lord, how manifold are Thy works! In wisdom hast Thou made them all. The earth is full of Thy creatures.

He watereth the hills from above; the earth is filled with fruit of Thy works. He bringeth forth grass for the cattle and green herbs for the service of men.

He appointed the moon for certain seasons, and the sun knoweth his going down.

These wait all upon Thee. . . . When Thou givest them food they gather it; and when Thou hidest Thy face they are troubled; when Thou takest away their breath they die.

The blood of these splendid old heroes, such as Amenophis III., Rameses II., and the author of the hymns just mentioned, Amenophis IV. (Akhnaton) flows through the veins of the Egyptians of today, and they are just as loyal to the fatherland now as those mentioned were in their time. What they require to render them, again, fully abreast with the most progressive peoples of the earth is an opportunity to develop themselves and their rich country without foreign ruler or dictation.

The facts which I have already disclosed, seem to me sufficient to convince the most skeptical that the British are in Egypt for one purpose only—that is, for their own

material benefit. As heretofore pointed out, they have been in Egypt since 1882, and much less than ten percent of the fourteen million people are able to read and write. The average wage of the toiler on farm or in work shop, is but six piasters (thirty cents) a day. No manufactories of any note, owned by Egyptians, have been permitted to operate in Egypt whereby they may utilize the products of their soil and provide labor and a decent living wage for the impoverished and numerically over-supplied farm laborers. Lancashire needs the cotton and Lancashire gets it. With the military, autocratic control by the British which now obtains in Egypt, plus the capitulatory rights (the baneful effects of which have been fully set forth in another chapter), the Egyptian government and people are held in a vise, with no possible way of extrication, unless given sympathetic help by the powers possessing these rights which, as pointed out, are preying upon their very vitals.



## THE APPENDICES

### FUAD I.

I DEEM it proper in the interest of fair play and truth to state that my tribute to King Fuad I., as found in previous chapters, was written soon after my resignation as Minister, and while holding all the good impressions formed by me of His Majesty during my nearly six years of official life as America's chief representative to Egypt. I had not only taken careful cognizance of his official acts toward his people and the foreign powers during this time, but I had made careful note of His Majesty's promises to his people; such for instance, as made by him in 1922, when the British government proclaimed Egypt to be a sovereign independent State. The other powers were requested by her to so recognize this official action, when he said: "The attainment of our national independence is the fruit which we have constantly encouraged and supported. We take God to witness and our people to witness our unshakable desire to continue to consecrate to the prosperity of our country and the happiness of our beloved people, all our strength and devotion."

I observed, however, as has been fully noted, that before I left Egypt the present imperial High Commissioner, George Lloyd, the successor of Lord Allenby, was determined to further subjugate this people, apparently not yet satisfied with the most drastic and inhuman ultimatums demanded and forced upon this helpless nation,

especially the one which came following the assassination of the governor general of the Sudan, Sir Lee Stack, December 1, 1924. Notwithstanding the fact, as was fully shown in the trial of these culprits, that the government of Egypt had absolutely nothing directly or indirectly to do with this crime, this autocrat and imperialist backed by his government seemed determined, in so far as it was humanly possibly, to undo all that had been done for the Egyptian people by his predecessor, or through his influence, in securing for them that modicum of independence granted them by the Lloyd George government, February 28, 1922. How well he has succeeded is now fairly well known to the reading public of the world. Lloyd (the High Commissioner) so manipulated affairs at a very critical period in the political affairs of Egypt in June, 1927, as to persuade the Egyptian King and his Prime Minister, Sarwat Pasha, to visit England. They were wined and dined and the Prime Minister was finally persuaded to enter into a treaty with the British, which, had it been accepted by the Egyptian government and Parliament, would have nullified for a decade all that had been secured along the line of independence in 1922. The Egyptian government quite naturally, and we believe very properly, refused to ratify this treaty.

It is worthy of note in this connection to observe that while the vanity of the Prime Minister was played upon in London, the press of foreign countries was being furnished with reports of a character to discredit his ability as a statesman. Not alone this, but one report at least, which referred to the King, would have the reader believe that this ruler was uncivilized. It was to the effect that the hosts of His Majesty, the King of Egypt, were having a most difficult time in procuring for him meat to

his liking, claiming that the King preferred horse meat. This sort of propaganda, I may add, is mild when compared with other absolutely unfounded reports circulated in my presence regarding the King by British subjects, who are pensioned and employed at this moment and will be for years to come, by the Egyptian government.

Steadily, since his arrival in Egypt, has this High Commissioner continued his efforts to tie, hand and foot, this King and his people. How well he has succeeded may be realized when we record the fact that during the last days of July, 1928, this naturally well disposed ruler, the King, was compelled—forced by the British—as we believe, in order to retain his throne, to turn about face and to capitulate from the constitutional rights of his country to the imperial High Commissioner of Egypt, George Lloyd, by signing two decrees, one of which suspended the Egyptian Parliament “for three years, or longer if circumstances shall so require.” The other decree abrogates indefinitely Article 15 of the Egyptian constitution, wherein is guaranteed freedom of speech and freedom of the press. This originally, and, as I have said, naturally well disposed King, has, we are sorry to relate, for the sake of holding on to his throne, actually deprived his people of the God-given liberty to which they are justly entitled.\* The King assigns as his reason for thus surrendering to the imperial dictates of Great Britain, that he was advised to do so by his present Prime Minister, Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha, who, it may be stated on the very best authority, commanded the confidence and

---

\*The King's annual allowance for himself and royal household is 858,852 Egyptian pounds, which is equivalent in American dollars to about \$4,294,260. Of this sum \$750,000 is his personal allowance or salary. The maintenance of the King's four palaces, including servants and all incidental expenses, is aside from the amount above noted.

respect of but twenty-eight of the two hundred and ten deputies in the Egyptian Chamber.

The reason assigned by the King for the violation of the rights guaranteed to his people under their constitution as noted above occurs to us as a procedure not to be looked upon lightly. For most certainly a provision, such as a constitution, adopted by a people for their guidance, and which the ruler accepts under a solemn oath to protect and defend, cannot, with honor, be treated as "a scrap of paper." As to whether, under all the circumstances surrounding the King's critical situation, the decrees which he caused to be issued were justified by extenuating circumstances, we shall leave to the judgment of the reader.

Apropos of this most unusual procedure upon the part of Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha and the decrees issued at the instance of the King, it is of marked interest to recall the fact that the Prime Minister immediately preceding the one named above, Mustapha Nahas Pasha, refused to acquiesce in this wholesale cancellation of the constitutional rights and privileges vouchsafed to this splendid people by this constitution, and was "curtly dismissed" by the King at the instance, or through the influence, as we believe, of the British High Commissioner. The King conferred the post of Prime Minister upon a man who was found willing to submit to this apparently most questionable official action. The liberties of these people have now been so completely abridged that no public meetings may be held in any one of the fourteen provinces where a protest to this disgraceful procedure may be made. It would seem the British have now completely manacled, through these measures, the Egyptian government and people, as they have caused to be neu-

tralized by the decrees issued, all actions of Parliament. England has twenty thousand soldiers, fully armed, in Egypt, besides British officers commanding the Egyptian army, so officered at the instance of the British High Commissioner, George Lloyd. British officers command the police in both Cairo and Alexandria. British airplanes are to be heard singing their menacing songs of bombs upon the slightest evidence of dissatisfaction of the Egyptian people over any plans proposed or insisted upon by the imperial High Commissioner.

Apropos of this recent crisis, to which I have above referred, I have deemed it proper in the interest of those of my readers who are desirous of acquainting themselves with the past and present political situations in Egypt, to herewith attach two personal letters received from the recent Prime Minister, Mustapha el Nahas Pasha and published with his consent, together with the three documents to which his letter refers; also a personal letter from him under date of December 30, 1928, and additional documents bearing upon the same subject matter, the recent crisis and its effects, all of which are self-explanatory and fully set forth the political situation up to date:

“Cairo, 27th of August, 1928.

“My dear Doctor Howell:

“I am in receipt of your kind letter and I thank you very much for the good wishes and compliments you have been good enough to send me.

“As for the questions you put to me in your letter, I send you three documents which, I hope, will enlighten you about them:

“(1) An English copy of the speech I delivered to the tea party that was organized by the Deputies and



Senators in honor of myself and my colleagues who continued to collaborate with me until the discharge of my cabinet.

“(2) A copy of the telegram of Maitre Wissa Wasif, the President of the Chamber of Deputies about the Seifeldine affair, which was scandalously exploited by our political adversaries to stigmatize my character as a public man.

“(3) The resolutions of the Egyptian Parliament which were passed in its meeting of 28th of July, 1928, despite the opposition of the government, and from which you will know the unconstitutional, criminal measures of Mohammed Mahmoud's cabinet.

“For further information, let me add to you that the present crisis is simply and solely another phase of the Anglo-Egyptian struggle. The British government seems to have contemplated the smash-up of the Waftd, and all that it stands for, especially now that Zaghloul Pasha is dead, and after the rejection of the Sarwat-Chamberlain treaty. We could not possibly legalize the position of the British troops in Egypt, as by treaty we should have done. The whole spirit of it defeated its own object. I told Lord Lloyd in my conversation with him before the treaty was officially rejected by us that no treaty of alliance is worth signing unless there is mutual confidence, and that this particular treaty is so hedged in with restrictions and servitudes that indicate a complete distrust of Egypt, that it resembles nothing more than a treaty imposed on a conquered country. He tried to call my attention to the dangers likely to result from its rejection, but I answered him that no government could possibly accept it.

"When Sarwat Pasha resigned, as you will see from my speech, the British government put one obstacle after another in my way to embarrass my cabinet so much that no real work could be done for the country.

"At last they thought it better to bring about a crisis through Egyptian hands. They resorted, as usual, to the Constitutional Liberals and the Reactionaries (Itthad Party) to plot against my cabinet. The Seifeldine affair was distorted and disfigured, and Mohammed Mahmoud hastened to bring about a ministerial crisis by his resignation, as he was promised to form the new ministry. He could not, of course, rely on any support from the Nation, so he had to suspend Parliament for a month, and when resentment became general and disaffection deeper, he dissolved Parliament for a period of three years, renewable if circumstances demand it. He has launched the country into a state similar to, if not worse, than that under British martial law. Two hundred newspapers have been suppressed by a stroke of his pen and the remaining are exposed to the same fate. Meetings are prohibited, etc., etc.

"Delegates from all over Egypt, however, come daily to the Nation's House to show their loyalty to me and to the Waftd's principles in spite of the police's trying to stop or hinder their progress. Our reception to the provinces and popular welcome accorded us everywhere leave no doubt of the universal discontent against the present despotic government.

"Most certainly it is, the British are backing, despite their denial, the policy of suspending the Constitution. They want to give Mohammed Mahmoud and his party the chance of governing this country in their own tyrannical way so that they might get them in the end a Par-

liament that might accept their treaty. But they will, I am sure, meet with downright failure.

"The Egyptian Parliament considers itself existing, despite the illegal Royal Prescript dissolving it, and will meet in spite of the present government, on the third Saturday of November, 1928.

"I am glad to tell you that Egypt welcomes the proposed Arbitration Treaty with America as well as the Kellogg Peace Pact. I have prepared a document on this subject and I send you a copy of it.

"I shall be glad to enlighten you on any other question if you want more information.

"Before I close I send you my kindest regards and best wishes.

"Yours sincerely,

(Signed "MUSTAPHA EL NAHAS.")

---

#### THE POLITICAL SPEECH OF THE PRESIDENT OF THE WAFD, HIS EXCELLENCY NAHAS PASHA

His Excellency Mustapha Nahas Pasha analyses the veritable causes of the Egyptian crisis; exposes the events in their historical sequence since the death of Zaghloul Pasha; and explains the attitude of "the majority" towards the present unconstitutional government of the minority (Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha's cabinet).

Senators, Deputies and Gentlemen:

In the name of my colleagues and in my own, I thank you as well as the two orators who have spoken just now. I thank you, not only for having organized this meeting in our honor but also because the object of this meeting

is to honor an idea which is far superior to our persons; the idea of constancy and loyalty in the service to the fatherland.

I thank you also for having given me the opportunity of standing amongst you, having at heart the same beliefs and sentiments as you have.

I feel that the hour has come when I ought to let you know the truth, the naked facts of the situation and the intentions of your adversaries. I must throw light on their intrigues against the nation.

You should not be astonished when you see them resort to intrigues, because even the strong, whose sole strength lies in their brute force, feel morally weak and move always in the dark; while the weak, feeling the might of their right, speak candidly and act in open daylight.

You have given me the honor of choosing me your chief, and for this, I feel infinitely strong. No one should underrate the strength I have drawn from your enlivening confidence and support.

We have our strength and they have theirs. They are a force against you, and we are a force only because of you. They are strong in oppressing us, and we are strong in resisting their oppression. They are strong in evil but we are strong enough to defend ourselves. They are strong in intriguing and fabricating lies against us, but our strength lies in our souls, in our right, and in our nation. The might of faith, the might of perseverance; these are the pillars of your renaissance, and there lies the real strength of your Wafd. If tyrants succeed in depriving the nation of the tokens of her dignity, in defrauding her of her liberty, in suspending her Parliament, and in trampling underfoot her constitution, they can

never, no matter what they do, uproot the beliefs that lie in the deepest recesses of her heart, or stain the purity of her conscience and the holiness of her sentiments. In Egypt, patriotism has become a faith, the Wafd a conviction, and liberty a sheer necessity. They will never be able to extinguish the light of right, no matter what their concerted strength might be.

### THE MINISTERIAL CRISIS

Gentlemen, the country is passing through a very grave crisis, which menaces her very existence as a free sovereign and independent state. It is only reasonable and logical that a crisis of such a magnitude could not possibly spring up in a single day. It has to be preceded by a series of incidents with many grave undercurrents, and this is what has actually been the case, although appearances have been so deceiving. They have been trying to conceal the real causes of the crisis, and at last sprung upon a sudden crisis, at a time when the machinery of government and Parliament was running smoothly. They have prepared the way for this crisis by a series of theatrical displays, which might have been alarming, had they not been ridiculous. The hero of this drama was His Excellency Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha.

The Constitution they have trampled underfoot; but our minds—how can they possibly deceive? Listen to them accusing us of hanging on to power and why:

(1) Because Mohammed Mahmoud, leader of the minority, could not or pretended that he could not work with Mustapha el Nahas, leader of the majority. That is why it became necessary that the leader of the ma-

jority must resign in order to leave the way open for the leader of the minority, and what a minority.

(2) As the coalition exists no more, the leader of the majority must be discharged and replaced by the leader of the minority—although the coalition is still non-existing.

(3) As the majority does not wish to be absorbed by the minority, and as the Constitution and reason itself both dictate that the majority should govern, but, as Mohammed Mahmoud belongs to the minority, Mohammed Mahmoud therefore must violate the Constitution while the people must divorce their reason and logic.

Besides, why should you need a Constitution, gentlemen? Does not Mohammed Mahmoud threaten to rule you with iron hand and without mercy? There is no doubt that Mohammed Mahmoud has an iron-hand, the British bayonets, but the question remains: Do British bayonets depend upon Mohammed Mahmoud as much as he depends upon the British bayonets? Do the British want, through this cabinet, to declare war on the nation in order to achieve certain ends and give Egypt up to a reign of unscrupulous lawlessness in which her liberties and her Constitution would be trampled underfoot? (That is the question.)

The Egyptian people are firmly convinced that a staggering weak cabinet like the present one, could not possibly stand on its feet, were it not supported by the foreigner who uses it as an instrument for his imperialistic designs. Thus it is, again, the fate of Egypt to be cursed by some of her sons who are the very cause of her woes and whom the foreigner employs against her invulnerable right to break down her wonderful unity.

## THE REAL CAUSES OF THE CRISIS

The causes of the crisis between the English and our Ministry go back to the time before the formation of my cabinet, on the retirement of Sarwat Pasha; and even go back to the death of the late leader Saiad Zaghloul Pasha, for since then they have contemplated to smash the Wafd. This is not a mere deduction on my part but I have official documents under my hand to prove this.

If you refer to the White Book published by the British government shortly after the rejection of the Sarwat-Chamberlain Draft Treaty, you will find that Mr. Selby met Sarwat Pasha in Paris, 31st of August, 1927, (one week after the death of Zaghloul Pasha). Mr. Selby says in this report: "Sarwat Pasha concluding, said that he believed a great opportunity had come for the saner elements in Egypt to make their voice heard. Generally speaking, he gave the impression that he by no means despaired of the future." Mr. Selby expressed the hope that Sarwat Pasha's estimate was justified. Very much would depend on the decision Egypt might take in the course of the next few weeks with regard to the choice of her leaders. He (Mr. Selby) expressed the opinion that if the Egyptians decided wisely, much might be done to reassure public opinion both at home and abroad. Sarwat Pasha said that he would exert all his influence when he returned to Egypt to achieve the result he so urgently desired.

This was the first secret effort made for overthrowing the Wafd and discrediting it in the eyes of the nation, dividing it into two opposing camps, moderate and extremist, but the Wafd was not long in proving that it formed an indivisible bloc in its principles as well as in its program. It has thus, by its wonderful solidarity,

amazed, and is still amazing, the foreigners in this country and abroad.

But there would have been no cause for amazement if they had known that the Wafdist were the men who could stand the stress and storms of life. They have grown amidst hardships but hardships do not weaken their grim determination; on the contrary, they enhance their courage, and stir their patriotism.

#### THE NEGOTIATIONS OF SARWAT PASHA AND THE REJECTION OF THE DRAFT TREATY

The negotiations of Sarwat Pasha with Sir Austin Chamberlain were conducted in an atmosphere of unprecedented secrecy. Had it not been for the Wafd, who insisted on the necessity of putting before the nation the results of the negotiations, these negotiations would have been conducted up to the present moment (as is seen in the White Book) in order that the nation might be lulled into a state of stupor under the auspices of the coalition. The Wafd which has been well inspired to adopt this attitude, has rejected the Draft Treaty, including that which Sarwat Pasha himself had volunteered to offer to Sir Austin Chamberlain, who declared on the 10th of May, 1928, in the House of Commons, the following as appeared in the "Ahram" paper of the 11th of May.

"Three days later Sarwat Pasha returned to the Foreign Office with a Draft Treaty. Does Mr. MacDonald think that I should have said to Sarwat Pasha 'No Excellency, we cannot accept the propositions you have prepared?' Those propositions of the Egyptian Prime Minister were friendly and deserved to be reviewed by us with due attention and in a friendly spirit too. The propositions we have cooperated in making were satis-



factory to both of us. Sarwat Pasha returned to Egypt convinced that he had rendered a great service to his country. If only the Egyptians had shown sufficient wisdom they would have seized the opportunity that was offered them. But I am sorry to say that they did not show that wisdom. After much delay I insisted that the treaty should be concluded. Sarwat Pasha answered that the Egyptian cabinet could do nothing before the Wafd had taken a decision on the subject; and the decision of the Wafd was against the treaty and thus killed it."

In the course of a conversation with Lord Lloyd on the subject of that treaty as is referred to briefly in the White Book, I explained in detail the attitude of the Wafd. It is enough to register here that the Wafd had the great honor of saving the country from that Draft Treaty which was meant to be imposed on us and I am glad to note that the nation has unanimously supported us in our attitude. A party paper, however, was not ashamed to make a faint propaganda in favor of the project in spite of the wonderful unanimity in its rejection. From the White Book and from the attitude of the British Press it is clear that the Wafd alone is responsible for the rejection of the Draft Treaty.

#### THE BRITISH NOTE OF THE 4TH OF MARCH

The rejection of the Draft Treaty by the Wafd made the British government rancorous towards it. They became furious because we simply refused to sign voluntarily the document of our eternal slavery. They, therefore, sent the note of March 4 to the Ministry of Sarwat Pasha which had already tendered its resignation—in other words, the note was really meant to be there, be-

fore the new Ministry. The object of that note was evident enough. Great Britain wanted to embarrass every Egyptian government which followed Sarwat's, and render impossible the task of governing the country. No constitutional government could possibly accept that a foreign government should have the right of interfering with Egyptian legislation. Sarwat did not want to answer that note on the assumption that his resignation was already offered, though not yet accepted. He has thus helped to embarrass the new cabinet that had to face the situation.

We have, however, borne the responsibility without fear, and faced the difficulties as we should have done. We declared before the representatives of the nation both before and after we came to power, that the crisis was very grave and that a collision between the two governments was inevitable. According to the Constitution and according to the decision of the majority, we came into power. We were still good enough to think it better for the coalition to ask the Constitutional Liberals to take part with us in the government of the country. But, alas! we were highly mistaken! The Constitutional Liberals started immediately to plot the work against the welfare of Egypt, as I will shortly explain.

#### THE CRISIS OF THE PUBLIC MEETINGS BILL

Gentlemen: I need not discuss the program of our popular Ministry nor its reply to the British note of March 4. This program and that reply are two historical documents which will stand out amongst the glorious annals of patriotic Egyptians. It is no exaggeration to say that no other Ministry could have thus acted in voicing the will of the people and safeguarding the dignity of the

country. Naturally, this would not satisfy the British who put obstacles in our path and created one difficulty after another until the crisis of the Public Meetings Bill was thrust upon us. You know, Gentlemen, the phases through which that crisis has passed; you know as well the dignified attitude of your Ministry towards it. But what you do not know are the intrigues, both within the cabinet and without, of those with whom we have coalesced. During our discussions with the British, in which we refused energetically any foreign interference in the Egyptian legislation, Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha used to declare to the high authorities, both English and Egyptian, that he had been obliged to be solidary with the Ministry for appearances' sake; but, on the other hand, he personally did not see the necessity of upholding that law, and that he was of the opinion that it should either be withdrawn or indefinitely postponed. Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha was not even ashamed to confide this opinion of his to some of his colleagues. He was apparently preparing the way for himself to premiership at the expense of his country. While this deplorable state of things was going on within the Ministry, the other Constitutional Liberals were competing with Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha himself to get to the ministerial posts. They approached the Residency where they presented their worthless goods in return for a few government posts. While we were face to face with the British, those so-called Egyptians were stabbing us from behind. Could there be any wonder if the British were thus hardened against us? Backed, as they were, by some supporters from amongst our ranks, they could not help going too far in their ambitions. The British, fully aware of our discord and weak front, became intransigent in their de-

mands and ended by sending us their ultimatum! Even at this critical moment, Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha could not forget his personal ambitions. He suggested that the cabinet should resign at once and thus leave the country without defense. We could not possibly accept such an interested advice. We stuck to our posts to find a solution both firm and reasonable. We thought it, however, advisable to turn away the danger without bending to it; the project was therefore postponed until November next. This decision which some are trying to belittle and to shirk the responsibility of taking part in, was unanimously accepted by all the Ministers without exception, including Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha himself. I can assure you that this solution which was presented to and accepted by Parliament, was the only solution which your patriotic government could have possibly made under the circumstances. We knew how to raise Egypt's voice high at the time when Great Britain was menacing the country with unknown acts of aggression. In our dignified reply we denied Great Britain the right of granting Egypt its independence by means of the Declaration of the 28th of February. We have, likewise, objected to any foreign interference in our legislation.

We have only used our constitutional right in asking the Senate to postpone the project to the next session. And for what purpose did we act thus, gentlemen? Was it because we wanted to submit to the British demand? Certainly not.

The British government wanted us to withdraw it indefinitely, and insisted on having a written promise from us to that effect. This we did not comply with. We have only postponed the project just to have time to convince the British government of our point of view, and

with the hope of paving the way for future understanding between the two governments. We have addressed Great Britain as equal to equal, and at the same time put an end to the crisis. Egypt's rights were thus left intact.

This is the dignified solution which even the leaders of the opposition have accepted in secret. Their sole objection to it, was that it might not be acceptable to the British government. But when they found that it was actually accepted they started to condemn it, together with the courteous thanks I addressed to the British government, who has renounced her policy of force and violence, and adopted instead a conciliatory attitude. Even in the course of my courteous thanks to the British government, I did not forget to maintain once more Egypt's rights, as every honest mandatory would.

If this is what they blame me for I feel proud of it, and declare that I am glad to have been able to accomplish it. I am not one of those who shirk the responsibility of their deeds. I act only according to the dictates of my conscience and the welfare of my country.

It is only their ill-will and rancour that makes them deliberately disfigure and distort the facts of the situation.

#### THE RESOLUTIONS OF THE EGYPTIAN PARLIAMENT

"As the present Ministry has, by mobilizing its military and police forces, impeded the meeting of Parliament in its building, the Senate and the Chamber of Deputies have, therefore, held their meeting in the Shercais House, Mohammed Ali Street, at 6:00 p.m., Saturday, July 28, 1928. The Senate was presided over by its vice-president, Mohammed Basyoony and the Chamber of Deputies, by its president, Maitre Wissa Wassif.

The following are other basic reasons for the meeting of the Parliament and for the resolutions which follow:

"The Egyptian people have struggled during the last half century for the Constitution, as one of its sacred rights. After incessant exertions and continuous sacrifices, the Constitution has been achieved and the people have begun to breathe freely, and march along the road of progress. Since it has assured their participation in the management of public affairs, in the enacting of laws, and the supervision over their application, they have started to feel a sense of tranquillity and reassurance about their own present and new future.

"As the two Houses of Parliament, the symbol of the nation's sovereignty, were doing their work of reform, putting in order the machinery of government, which has, for so long, suffered from the management of autocratic governments prior to the Constitution and during its suspension in 1925-1926; as they were supervising the administration of the country, examining the budget, passing the necessary legislation, safeguarding the rights of the people, uplifting the people to the level which both their natural intelligence and their glorious ancient history justify; as they are endeavoring to make Egypt occupy her place among the civilized countries of the world; and as peace and order were reigning over the country, a handful of self-seeking men, forming the present ministry, usurped power, and on July 19, 1928, made a far-reaching *coup d'état* against the Constitution. The social and political life of the country has been profoundly disturbed, the grandeur of the national rising disfigured, the Constitution suspended, Parliament dissolved, the liberties already established by the Constitution have been stifled. The power of legislation has

been usurped and a reign of unscrupulous despotism has prevailed. I, therefore move the adoption of the following resolution:

"Whereas the decree of July 19, 1928, suspending the application of certain articles of the Constitution and dissolving the two Houses is null and void: the Senate being undissolved (see Article 81, Constitution) and the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies being only valid when the act of dissolution provides for the new elections to be held within a period of two months, and for the reassembling of the Chamber within ten days after the holding of the elections (see Article 89, Constitution).

"And, whereas, the suspension of Parliament for three years renewable at the expiration of that period is contrary to Article 1 of the Constitution which declares the Egyptian government to be parliamentary; and to Article 155 which says 'Nothing laid down by the present Constitution can, under any pretext whatever, be suspended except temporarily under martial law or in time of war. In no case can the meeting of Parliament in the conditions laid down by the present Constitution be impeded.'

"And, whereas, Article 24, Constitution, says that the legislative power is exercised by the King in collaboration with the Senate and the Chamber of Deputies.

"And, whereas, Article 25, Constitution, says that no law could be enacted before it is passed by Parliament and sanctioned by the King, therefore be it

"(1) Resolved, That Parliament—House of Deputies and Senate—remains undissolved, and enjoys full right to meet according to the Constitution.

"(2) Resolved, That the present ministry is revolting against the Constitution; is operating without the confidence of Parliament, and as the legal representative con-

stitutional body of the Government we insist on its immediate resignation.

“(3) Resolved, That all legislation likely to be issued by the present ministry is null and void.

“(4) Resolved, That all political, commercial or financial agreements likely to be concluded by the present ministers with foreign powers or with individuals, especially those mentioned in chapter 4 of the Constitution, are null and void, not supported by the nation.

“(5) Resolved, That the Parliament adjourn its meetings to the third Saturday in November, 1928, unless circumstances necessitate an earlier meeting which will be called by the president.”

“After the resolutions had been passed and signed by all the members present, the ex-Premier, Mustapha Nahas Pasha, stood up raising his right hand and took the following oath: “By God Almighty I will defend and protect the Constitution with all my strength and determination to the last breath of my life.”

All the other members then followed suit amidst great enthusiasm.

WISSA WASSIF,  
President, Chamber of Deputies.  
MOHAMMED BASYOONY,  
Vice President of Senate.

FULL TEXT OF THE LETTER OF THE RECENT PRIME  
MINISTER OF EGYPT, NAHAS PASHA, WITH RESPECT  
TO THE KELLOGG PEACE PACT TREATY, TO WHICH  
HIS PERSONAL LETTER REFERS.

(Translation from the French)

“Cairo, August 14, 1928.

“Excellency:

“Egypt and her preceding constitutional government were intensely interested in the question of the pact



against the war. The generous idea of 'renouncing openly the war in so much as an instrument of national politics' had found in Egypt a people and a government ready to associate themselves therewith while maintaining, nevertheless, certain precisions relative to the rights of Egypt. The said government had even undertaken the first steps to the effect, unfortunately, that some unforeseen political circumstances hindered the free play of the constitutional jurisdiction and carried to power an unconstitutional cabinet unqualified to speak or to enlist in the name of Egypt.

"But the question remains for the country, one of essential importance and it is the duty of the Wafd to indicate the point of view of Egypt relative to the monument of international rights that the powers are ready to sign August 27, 1928. For the Wafd is alone authorized to speak in the name of the Egyptian nation, so much the more since it counts a majority of more than nine-tenths of the members in the Parliament, which, in spite of an illegal dissolution, has not ceased to exist and has manifested the national will by reuniting July 28, 1928.

I. "In an instrument of this kind, and in order that it may perform in reality, the agreement of all the powers, great or small, is very desirable, especially the agreement of the powers that by their geographical situation present for world peace a first-class value. Egypt, situated at the crossways of the continents, is conscientiously regarding her international duties on the condition that they harmonize, that which is possible, with her national rights. She would be happy to be able to bring her contribution to the work of universal peace, of which the pact of non-aggression seeks to cast down the foundations.

II. However, she is not without anxiety as to the interpretation that could be given to paragraph X contained in the Britannic document addressed to the ambassador from the United States to London.

"The terms of the first article of the proposed pact, relative to the renunciation of war in so much as an instrument of national politics, makes it desirable that one recall that there exists certain regions in the world in which prosperity and integrity constitute a special and vital interest for the peace and security of Great Britain. In the past the government of His Majesty has had some trouble in proclaiming that any intervention in these regions would not be tolerated on his part; their protestation against any attack constitutes for the British Empire a measure of self-defense. It must be clearly understood that the government of His Majesty in Great Britain accepts this new treaty on the precise condition that it carry to naught prejudice against her liberty of action in this regard."

The commentaries that have been made of it in the English press, and the indirect explanations that have been given to the House of Commons, allow the supposition that Egypt, in the eyes of the Britannic government, is playing a game with these regions over which Great Britain pretends to maintain a liberty of action, total and without control.

III. If it is thus, Egypt can now and henceforth only cause her absolute protestation to act in forecast of any agreement that would be of a nature to cause injury to her rights. Egypt is an independent country and her independence, obtained by means of a victorious war against Turkey, has been consecrated by the London convention of July 15, 1840, followed by "Hatti Cherif"

February 13, 1841. The rights of Egypt were not only recognized by Turkey, but also by the great powers whose intervention guarantees this pact of deliverance, and who, on the other hand, by the famous "Protocol of Disinterestedness" signed at Constantinople, June 25, 1882, ought under any other circumstances to guarantee to Egypt her political rights. The only tie, entirely nominal, which continued to exist between the "Sublime Gate" and Egypt lay in the annual payment of a tribute.

IV. From 1844 to 1882 the exercise of our independence knew no restriction. The Britannic occupation of 1882 has never had a legal title, and against this occupation the people and her successive governments have never ceased protesting. Besides, Great Britain gave to Egypt and the powers, the assurance that this occupation had only a momentary character, and that she did not expect to profit by the situation. (Protocol of Disinterestedness of June 25, 1882). Besides more than sixty declarations from English ambassadors and ministers did not cease to be expressed from 1882 until 1899, whether it was the provisional character of this occupation, or the absolute disinterestedness of England in the question of Egypt.

V. In 1914, Great Britain added to the occupation, the protectorship. But, as in 1882, she declared that it was a provisional measure necessitated on account of world war, a measure aiming to safeguard the independence of Egypt and one that would end with the war.

Careful not to create with the allies any difficulty, and in view of having consecrated to the signature of peace, the effective exercise of her supremacy and of her independence, Egypt took part in the struggle and offered to

the allies, and particularly to Great Britain, more than a million men for strategical works, a financial participation in the war of three million, five hundred thousand pounds, all her means of communication and all her raw materials.

But the war finished, she had to await a long time the suppression of the protectorship and the recognition of her independence. She would probably still be awaiting it today if the Egyptian people had not revolted and if the national movement had not taken the amplitude that it did, that which induced the government of London to take away the protectorship by the Declaration of February 28, 1922.

VI. The Declaration of February 28, 1922, that repealed the protectorship and, by four distinct limitations, submitted the independence of Egypt to restrictions such that she became illusive, was repulsed by the Egyptian people. No constitutional government nor any responsible Egyptian has ever consented and never will consent to consider itself bound by the said reservations which, on the other hand, England herself subordinated to future and free discussions between Great Britain and Egypt. It was then an act binding on one party only, without any legal foundation or any judicial ability, and which would not under any circumstances, bind or oblige Egypt.

It is that which the English government, in 1924, has recognized explicitly. From the correspondence which preceded the negotiations between Zaghoul Pasha, president of the Egyptian council and Mr. Ramsay MacDonald, president of the Britannic council, there follows the evidence that the foreign office had admitted the point of view of the first constitutional government which,

having qualifications to negotiate, traced thus the road for its successors.

May 18, 1924, Zaghloul Pasha addressed to the minister from Egypt to London a dispatch to communicate to Mr. Ramsay MacDonald, in which was said: "The Egyptian government does not consider itself bound by the unilateral Declaration of February 28, 1922. It does not recognize in England the right that she is given to reserve, at her discretion, the enumerated materials in article three of the said declaration, and her acceptance to discuss the pending questions cannot, in any case, be interpreted as an express or implied compliance with the reservations of article three of the above mentioned Declaration."

July 3, Lord Allenby reminded Zaghloul Pasha by letter, that on May 15, Mr. Ramsay MacDonald clearly told the Egyptian Minister from Egypt to London, that due to the fact that one party or the other would explain the position in which it was held, the other party was by no means obliged to recognize this position. Besides, with the assurance that Zaghloul Pasha desired to have, the act of entering into negotiations would not be brought against him, and that the negotiations themselves would be free from all restrictive conditions. Lord Allenby replied that Mr. Ramsay MacDonald desired that it be clearly established that, in his opinion, none of the parties in the negotiations could be considered as having been prejudiced by its position in taking part in free and friendly discussions.

By his reply of July 6, Zaghloul Pasha took action on the Declarations of the English Prime Minister, and specified once more very clearly, the position of the Egyptian government with regard to the reservations con-

tained in the Declaration of February 28, 1922, and, on this foundation Mr. MacDonald invited Zaghoul Pasha to come to London concerning the negotiations.

Thus the attempts of negotiations of 1924 to reunite the pending questions between the two countries have proved that Egypt has refused to enlist these negotiations on the foundation of the Declaration of February 28, 1922, and that the Britannic government, recognizing the legitimacy of this attitude, has consented that discourse be absolutely free.

VII. And the more so, as Egypt could only admit that the Britannic government might avail itself, implicitly, or explicitly of the said Declaration that she has always refused to recognize, in order to set Egypt aright, supposing that such be its intention, with the regions of the world where it has reserved for itself a complete liberty of action.

In submitting her protestation to 'the governments interested in the signature of the pact of non-aggression, Egypt not only cares about setting forth that the reservation contained in paragraph ten of the Britannic document never be opposable to her, but still above all, that world peace could not be assured while indefeasible rights were being threatened, and while, in the hierarchy of the apparently opposite interests, the great powers were causing to disappear the complementary interests of one of them before the essential and vital interests of the less powerful nations, or if finally an equal reservation must cover the enterprises of an imperialism having no other justification except that of force.

VIII. Besides, Egypt, who is in dispute with Great Britain, does not nourish, with regard to this last, any sentiment of animosity. She would be happy, on the contrary,

to conciliate the interests of the two countries by a loyal and just understanding, safe guarding the Britannic interests and assuring the effective exercise of Egyptian independence.

In the absence of an agreement, the objective of Great Britain being the security of her imperial communications through the Suez Canal, it is evident that the fears that she could formulate in this regard, concern Egypt less than any other State. But, the neutrality of the Suez Canal is already guaranteed by the convention of Constantinople of 1888 which, always in force, remains the law of the parties.

In order to manifest the sincerity of her intentions and the loyalty of her politics, Egypt would see no disadvantage, in order to give every abatement to the powers in general and to Great Britain in particular, in accepting, if such should be the case, that the neutrality of the Suez Canal be placed under a veritable international control by the society of nations.

Egypt, in every case, could only agree, whatever might be the motives solicited by Great Britain or by any other power, that she be in some way placed beyond the common law regulating the relations of civilized nations and under the continual threat of an intervention placing in peril her sovereignty and her independence.

IX. Egypt hopes that the powers whose general initiative suggested the creation of the pact of non-aggression, and who wished to introduce a kind of spiritual commandment in the relations of the people, of whom the interests take each day, more extension and more unreasonableness, will be willing, the time having come, to reserve for her signature and for her observations a sympathetic welcome.

Will you accept, Excellency, the assurance of my high consideration.

MUSTAPHA EL NAHAS,  
President of the Wafd.

Cairo, 30th of December, 1928.

My dear Doctor Howell:

I am so sorry to have delayed the answer to your letter for so long, a delay that was brought about by the death of my mother and the numerous meetings I had to attend and the various anniversaries that were celebrated here during the last few months.

I send you, herewith:

(1) My speech on the occasion of the first anniversary of the death of Zaghloul Pasha, in which I portrayed in detail his struggle for liberty and independence, and his memorable work both in Government and Parliament up to the Sarwat-Chamberlain Draft Treaty. (French copy.)

(2) My speech on the tenth anniversary of Egypt's Day, viz., the 13th of November, in which I have analyzed that notorious Draft Treaty and explained why Egypt could not possibly accept it, together with the results that followed its rejection. (French copy.)

(3) An English translation of the minutes of the second memorable meeting of Parliament, Saturday, 17th of November, 1928, which was held despite the prohibition of the present despotic government, and its mobilization of the army and police forces to prevent its taking place. (French copy.)

(4) My speech at Mansura

From these four documents, I hope you will draw some valuable information.



In my previous letter, if I remember rightly, I brought the description of the situation down to the 28th of June, 1928, on which day the Parliament met despite the government and passed some very important resolutions. I shall, therefore, pick up the thread from that date.

To sum up the situation by saying that the stifling of all liberties has been doubled or quadrupled and that the British support of the present reactionary movement has become more clear and conspicuous, as a brief description of what is actually taking place these days will show:

"Spies have become innumerable, the finances of the country have been unscrupulously squandered, the most prominent and influential Zaghloulist newspapers (the organs of the overwhelming majority) have been suppressed, others suspended for long periods of four months—the sole accusation being that they disturb people's minds against the present regime." Newspapers are orally prohibited by the Minister of Interior from publishing the news of arrests except in vague round-about expressions, e. g. "So and So has been arrested because he was found carrying some inflammatory circulars"—those so-called inflammatory circulars are nothing more or less than "the Parliament's Resolutions." Everybody asks: "if these resolutions are considered inflammatory publications why not arrest all the members of Parliament responsible for them?" And "what earthly wisdom is there in prohibiting newspapers from mentioning clearly that the arrests are due to the possession of the resolutions of Parliament?" What is extraordinary still, is that the Minister of Interior, Mohammed Mahmoud Pasha gave the Kawkab and the Ahram newspapers a last warning for having published a letter from Wissa Wassif Bey, the

President of the Chamber of Deputies, refusing some false allegations about himself and Parliament published by "The Observer" and cabled to the Ahram from its London correspondent. Wissa Bey had the undisputed legal right to publish his refutation and to defend himself. His reply, however, contained some of the important resolutions of Parliament (passed on the 17th of November, 1928) together with a correct description of what had actually taken place in that historic meeting. This genuine publication has been sufficient excuse to officially threaten those papers that the next step would be to suppress them indefinitely. To this extent has come the wanton aggression on people's rights and liberties.

The premier makes tours in the provinces and delivers speeches about some of the internal reforms which the present government is undertaking—viz., the creation of new hospitals, the filling in of swamps, etc., etc.

The people are not at all deceived by these transparent tactics which are meant to obviate their minds from the intolerable crime committed by the present ministry against the Constitution and the Parliamentary regime of the country. The ministerial organs here and the London press, however, are not in the least ashamed to declare that the premier meets, wherever he goes, with "indescribable enthusiasm", and that "the people these days support his ministry" and "have deserted the Wafd." We say: "Well, if that is the case, why do you dread going to the elections with us? Why do you illegally suspend the Parliamentary regime if you are so confidently certain of getting a majority of votes?" But they all know they are telling lies and that the nation is more than ever loyal to the Wafd. It is worthy

of note, that whenever the premier visits a province, its notables, lawyers, doctors, prominent farmers and merchants desert that province and come to visit me in "The House of the Nation" and express their loyalty to, and support of, the Wafd. The premier, however, together with the Cairo correspondents of the London papers, declare that he has been met by the responsible and weighty men of the province, but they take good care not to mention one single name of those hosts that are supposed to have entertained him.

A striking contrast from these official and unwelcome visits of the premier to the provinces are the popular and eagerly-sought visits of the Wafd. Since I wrote to you last, we have visited Damanhour and Mansura, and the enthusiastic reception accorded to us was really wonderful. In spite of the repressive measures taken by the local authorities acting on instructions from the Minister of Interior to suppress all demonstrations of popular sentiments, and in spite of the facts that the main streets were either tarred or blocked at their entrances by huge street-engines guarded by policemen, and bridges opened to hinder crossing, and marquees specially erected for our reception ruthlessly pulled down, etc., etc., people of all classes have admirably managed to overcome these obstacles, some swam in the canals as we passed by, some rode horses and raced with our train, thousands were on roofs and balconies etc., all cheering and waving flags. There was, however, one marquee left by the police to appease public resentment, and the most prominent men of the province flocked to it. Speeches bearing on the present political situation were delivered, and the loyalty to the Wafd most eloquently emphasized. All the foreigners in these provinces saw for themselves

what a miserable failure the present ministry has justly reaped.

The unusual friendly tone of the British papers and the carefully concealed, though clear, support of the British High Commissioner here of the present unconstitutional government, are in themselves a sufficiently eloquent proof that the British government is at the back of this reactionary movement. Take the following instance:

The Wadinil (a newspaper of Alexandria) published an article that contained nothing but a narration of the news widely known in all circles concerning the British High Commissioner's last visit to the King in Alexandria. The visit was extraordinary both in its circumstances and the results that followed it. For example, after the visit, the High Commissioner returned to his train at Sidi Gaber, followed soon after by Tewfik Nessim Pasha. The departure of the train was delayed twenty-seven minutes until the English Commandant of the Alexandria police returned from a commission to Mehala el Kobra. The High Commissioner was awaiting his return to personally hear his report. The following day saw some extraordinary results:

FIRSTLY. A royal prescript was issued for the elections of the Coptic patriarch after prolonged disputes and procrastination for unknown reasons. The High Commissioner interfered in favor of one Coptic camp against another—thus terminating the Coptic crisis.

SECONDLY. The High Commissioner is known to have advised the King to bestow on his premier sufficient support and authority in proportion to his overwhelming responsibility in paralyzing the Constitution; in other words, whatever prescripts the premier demanded should be issued without hesitation.

THIRDLY. The princes were known to have intended to issue a manifesto demanding the restoration of the Parliamentary regime, but the High Commissioner delegated Mr. Ingram to Mehala el Kobra to tell Prince Youssef Kamal that the princes were prohibited from taking such a step.

These details, though widely known, were a pretext for the present government to suppress *The Wadinil*, easily Alexandria's best paper.

It seems to me that the British government and the reactionary elements here imagine that the *Wafd* and myself could be destroyed by such repressive measures. Oppression begets oppression, and tyranny engenders hate and bitterness, not against the victim—the *Wafd*—but most certainly against its authors, the makers of this misery. I give you just one example to illustrate this fact:

When my mother died, senators, deputies, prominent religionists, commercial men and notables flocked to Samanoud from all over Egypt to take part in the funeral. The funeral was to take place on a day following heavy rainfalls that turned all the streets and alleys into muddy areas; but thanks to the villagers' concerted efforts, they managed to clean the funeral's route, and made it possible for about one hundred thousand people to march in comfort. No sympathy more eloquent could have been demonstrated by those unpaid villagers towards me. The nation, at large, seems to have seized the occasion of my misfortune to demonstrate in every possible manner its whole-hearted participation and sympathy so eloquently expressed in innumerable telegrams of condolence.

I am more than ever convinced that the nation is loyal to Zaghloul's principles and the *Wafd*; and I am per-

fectly sure that the present mischievous and deliberately distorted propaganda against us will never succeed. With such grim determination on our part, we are confident that the conscience of Great Britain will be stricken one day, the Constitution will be restored, and the independence achieved.

Before I close the letter, I feel I must send you one more piece of news of great significance.

The Wafd scored a great victory on the 15th instant through the lawyers of Egypt who held their general annual meeting for the election of the one-year president of the Bar Association. The contest for the presidency was most acute between Basyouny Bey (the Wafd candidate) and Tewfik Doss Pasha (ex-minister and ministerial candidate). At Abdin Palace, the British Residency, the Ministers all of them looked forward to Doss Pasha's victory. In the meantime, the ministerial organs waged a violent campaign against the Wafd and its leaders. The elections, however, proved an unprecedented victory for the Wafd's candidate. Not only that, but all the members of the Executive Committee chose Wafdists. Then the following resolutions were passed:

"The general meeting of lawyers whose lives are devoted to the service of right and justice, protest most vigorously against the revolt of the present ministry in suspending the Constitution, suppressing the Parliamentary regime and stifling people's liberties which are already guaranteed by the Constitution, being the bulwark of justice and equality among all citizens. The lawyers declare that they second the resolutions passed by the Bar Association July 22, 1928, upholding the constitution which was won after strenuous struggle, as well

as declare their solidarity with the nation in its noble struggle for the restoration of the Parliamentary regime and the achievement of complete independence."

Noteworthy, the reactionaries and the British imperialists had already spread falsely that the Wafd enjoyed the confidence of the masses alone through duping them, and that the well-educated classes were all anti-Wafdists. The election of the Bar Association on which high castles were built gave them a stunning blow.

With my kindest regards to you and to your wife, I remain,

Yours very sincerely,

MUSTAPHA EL NAHAS.

P.S. 1. You ask me if I have any objection to your making use of my personal letters to you; I hasten to tell you that I have not the slightest objection.

P.S. 2. \* \* \* \* \*

P.S. 3. As for the Suez Canal question you put to me, I am afraid the matter has not yet received full consideration here. One thing is certain, however, namely that Egypt will deal with it in a national and impartially international manner when it reverts to the sole possession of Egypt in 1969.

## THE CHAMBER OF DEPUTIES

FIRST MEETING—FOURTH SESSION, SATURDAY, 17TH OF  
NOVEMBER, 1928.

I have the honor to communicate to you a summary of the first meeting, fourth session, of the Egyptian Parliament, which has been held despite the repressive measures taken against it by the present despotic government whose detectives, these days, pursue all the

representatives of the nation, and whose troops and policemen patrol the streets continuously.

According to Article 96 of the Constitution which states: "The Parliament shall be convoked to ordinary session every year, by the King, before the 3rd Saturday of the month of November. If the Prescript is not issued, the Parliament shall meet of its own accord on that day," and

As the present Ministry has, by armed forces, impeded the meeting of Parliament in its building, therefore:

The Chamber of Deputies has met today at 6:00 p.m. in the building of the Balagh newspaper, 44 Dawawin Street, under the chairmanship of its eldest member Mohammed Said Bey, member for Koum El Tawil constituency.

The processes of electing the members of the "Bureau" have been made, and resulted in the election of Maitre Wissa Wassif president, His Excellency Aly Shamsy Pasha and Maitre Hussein Hilal Bey vice-presidents, the Parliamentary secretaries and the Whips, the same as in the last session.

His Excellency Nahas Pasha: I sincerely congratulate the president; the vice-presidents, the Parliamentary secretaries and the Whips on the precious confidence they enjoy in this House.

It pains us that, though today is the day of the nation, brute force stands an obstacle in the way of the representatives of the nation. The Constitution dictates that if the Parliament is not convoked before the third Saturday of November, i. e. today, it meets of its own accord; in other words if the Executive ignores its convocation in order that it may not carry out the duties imposed by the Constitution, the authority of the nation automatically



asserts itself and the Parliament meets despite everything and everybody.

In our case, the Executive has not only ignored its duty, but has taken one more aggressive step by publicly prohibiting the meeting. This is a sheer revolt against the Constitution. Moreover, the Executive resorts to and employs the armed forces of the country to carry out this prohibition, although it is obvious that the armed forces are only intended to defend the authority of the nation, not to trespass on it.

But you, the representatives of the people, are determined to uphold the authority of the nation in spite of the Executive and in the face of the armed forces. By so doing you are only fulfilling your duties, respecting your sacred oaths which you solemnly made consequent to your election and which you repeated on that historic day, the 28th of July.

On that important day we reiterated our oaths of allegiance to the Constitution, that we would defend it at all costs and to the last breaths of our souls. Hence, our meeting today to attend to the public affairs and to carry the necessary resolutions for the protection of the nation's rights and finances against all aggressors. I, therefore, move the adoption of the following resolution and preamble:

"Whereas, The Parliamentary regime of the Egyptian Kingdom established on the 19th of April, 1923, has been in actual force since the first meeting of Parliament on the 15th of March, 1924, (Article 163 Constitution), and

"Whereas, The Constitution states that: 'Nothing laid down by the present Constitution can, under any pretext whatever, be suspended except temporarily under martial law or in time of war. In no case the meeting in

the conditions laid down by the present Constitution be impeded (Article 155 Constitution), and

“Whereas, The Constitution gives Parliament alone the right of examining and sanctioning the budget of the state revenues and expenditures, and in case this is not completed, for one reason or other, the old budget alone remains in force until the law of the new budget is issued consequent to the sanction of Parliament (Article 138 Constitution), and

“Whereas, No public loans could be raised, nor any engagements likely to incur expenses, could be contracted before the previous sanction of Parliament (Article 137 Constitution), and

“Whereas, The present Ministry has revolted against the Constitution and prevented the Parliament from completing the examination of the budget of 1928-29, by reason of its suspending the Parliamentary regime and closing the buildings of Parliament, and

“Whereas, The Ministry by so doing has violated the Constitution to which all have sworn allegiance including the present premier, ministers, senators and deputies (Article 94 Constitution), and

“Whereas, The budget of 1927-28, which was passed by Parliament, is alone, the only legal budget that must not be exceeded, and

“Whereas, Parliament, has approved of the declarations of the previous constitutional government concerning the Great Irrigation projects, and

“Whereas, It is legally impossible to carry into execution such projects as the great irrigation works before the thorough study promised to Parliament is completed and the expenses sanctioned by Parliament (Article 137 Constitution), and

"Whereas, The present Ministry's assumption of the right of legislation is in direct contradiction with the law issued in 1926 consequent to delicate constitutional discussions and after being passed by the unanimous notes in both Houses—which law prohibits even constitutional governments from making legislation in the absence of Parliament, therefore be it

"(1) Resolved, That the House reiterates its vote of no confidence in the present Ministry.

"(2) Resolved, That the Ministry is gravely responsible for all that it has done or will do, contrary to the limits of the Constitution.

"(3) Resolved, That the only budget that must be in force at the present time is the one of the year 1927-28. The Ministers are responsible personally and in their public capacity for any expenditure unauthorized by Parliament.

"(4) Resolved, That the House condemns the hasty execution of the project of Gabal Awlia Dam before the completion of the studies promised by the constitutional government in 1926, and before the sanction of Parliament.

"(5) Resolved, That the House repeats the resolution previously carried on the 28th of July, 1928, viz: 'All political, commercial or financial commitments concluded with foreign powers or with individuals, especially those mentioned in chapter four of the Constitution, are null and void, not binding the nation.

"(6) Resolved, That the House demands the withdrawal of the armed forces so that it can meet in its own buildings to carry out the duties imposed by the Constitution. The present Ministry is responsible for the armed siege of the Parliament buildings and the wanton

violation of their sanctity by the presence of armed forces which are forbidden, by the Constitution, to enter or garrison near the doors without the permission of the President."

The Resolution has been carried by perfect unanimity (number present 135).

HIS EXCELLENCY NAHAS PASHA: "As the present Ministry has already prohibited the newspapers and the printing offices from publishing resolutions of Parliament, I propose that the honorable members, the spokesmen of the people, should communicate to their constituencies these wise resolutions which safeguard the rights and authority of the nation. The honorable members should afterwards return to Cairo for the future legitimate meetings."

The suggestion has been unanimously accepted.

MAITRE FIKRY ABAZA: "In this pure patriotic atmosphere in which the old minority amalgamates with the overwhelming majority in protest against the present rebellious Ministry, I declare that today there are parties no more—the whole nation presents one united front against all aggressors of the Constitution. If the oldest party in Egypt did not support the great majority which is struggling for the restoration of the Parliamentary regime it would commit a terrible crime towards the fatherland. I assure the honorable members that the end of the present reign is within sight, because it is against the laws of native, established regime of the country. You live in the provinces, and witness scandalous acts which make one blush with shame, and which can, by no means, continue for long. The Parliament is bound to be convoked to resume its constitutional duties."

MAITRE ALY SAYED AYOUB: "I have no intention of delivering a speech as your feelings and mine are the same. I only want to move that we should meet in the buildings of Parliament at all cost, and come what may, on the hands of the Executive who employs the army in preventing the representatives of the nation from exercising their rights. The present Minister of Justice once declared, when Minister of War in the cabinet of Adly Pasha, that the government which employs the army to prevent the nation's representatives from meeting in the buildings of Parliament, simply prostitutes the army. Let us register this against him and against the Ministry of which he is a member. Let us register that, by using the army for the above-mentioned purposes, the present Ministers commit what one of them described as 'prostituting the army.'"

MAITRE FIKRY ABAZA: "I second the motion of the honorable member Maitre Ayoub, and on my part I propose that the matter should be left to the discretion of the Bureau."

After some discussion, the Bureau was charged to find the means for the execution of the motion.

THE PRESIDENT: (Thanked the members for their confidence in reelecting him to the presidency and) said: "I solemnly promise you all to be firm and determined in defending the Constitution and the liberties of the country. I swear by everything that I hold dear and sacred that I will be in the forefront of those who will protect the Constitution with every possible legitimate means. I am confident that we shall, before long, rescue the Constitution from the hands of the aggressors, and restore to the country its respected authority."

It was then decided to charge the Bureau to communicate the resolutions of the Parliament to whomsoever it deemed advisable to do so.

At about 7:00 p.m. the President adjourned the House and will later fix the date of the next meeting.

N.B. The Senate held a similar meeting and carried the same resolutions.

Cairo, 17/11/28

WISSA WASSIF,

President of the Chamber of Deputies.

In the foregoing pages reference has been made to the dismissal of the recent Prime Minister, Mustapha Nahas Pasha, from his high office as President of the Council of Ministers.

The chief reason assigned for his dismissal was that he, in connection with his colleagues Wissa Wassif Bey, Speaker of the House of Deputies, and Fakhry Bey, was guilty of having charged excessive fees, as a lawyer, in the Prince Seifeldine case.

Indeed, the citation of this well-known case (the Prince in question being a brother-in-law to King Fuad) was used as a pretext for the last *coup d'état* which resulted in an indefinite suspension of the constitution and dissolution of the Egyptian Parliament.

This rather grave charge was but recently referred to a Lawyers' Disciplinary Court, consisting of the vice-president of the Appeal Court, three Appeal judges (Supreme Court judges) and one lawyer representing advocates' counsel.

On January 2, 1929, this court issued its judgment acquitting Nahas Pasha and his two colleagues of these alleged irregularities, dismissing the charges against them as unfounded, both in law and fact.

A summary of the grounds of the judgment published in all the Egyptian papers, and not a few foreign ones as well, caused considerable sensation throughout Egypt. For not only were the leaders of the Wafd acquitted and their integrity by this high court emphasized, but the judgment condemned in severe terms the irregular proceedings of the Prosecutor General, styling some charges as purely imaginary; and it further declared that adversaries of Nahas Pasha had restored to bribery of witnesses, theft and falsification of documents in their endeavor to make a case against him and his colleagues.

The announcement of this verdict brought thousands of telegrams of congratulations to the ex-Prime Minister from leading Egyptians, including prominent princes of the Royal Family as well as from foreign residents.

Following is a summary of the grounds of the judgment:

"Regarding the charge of excessive fees, the court decided the charge was wholly unfounded because, according to law, the fees agreed upon between lawyer and client represent only a rough estimate of work, subject to reconsideration by the judge who may either reduce or increase fees according to the work actually accomplished.

"In the present case Nahas Pasha and colleagues acting as advocates on behalf of Prince Seifeldine had only brought action for an annual pension to be awarded to him, while the principal action concerning the withdrawal of the interdiction was not even begun; it therefore, being impossible to estimate the value of impending work. Nor can lawyers be asked to disclose beforehand what proceedings they will take on behalf of their client because this is contrary to the interests of the client and

to professional duties. In this case the client declares that the fees are not at all excessive; therefore, the council finds the charge without foundation both in law and in fact.

"As regards the charge that lawyers took each five hundred pounds as provision in advance, while bulk fees were made payable in arrears on successful issue of the lawsuit, the court decided that the attitude of the lawyers in this respect was far from being reprehensible. But, on the other hand, is praiseworthy and considerate towards their client for whose strained financial position they showed real compassion by accepting that bulk fees be payable only when the Prince gets back his whole property on successful issue of the case. The court further declares that fees stipulated contain no *quota litis* and that the various clauses in the contract, and proceedings taken in execution thereof, are absolutely correct and conform to law, the court dismissing arguments of the prosecution as being both erroneous and unjustifiable by the facts of the case.

"Concerning the political side of the case and the allegation by the prosecution that the lawyers were chosen for exercising their political influence on behalf of Prince Seifeldine and for taking steps to abolish the Crown Council, the court found that no steps were taken by Seifeldine and for taking steps to abolish the Crown Council, but on the contrary they brought their case before the said council and totally abstained from exercising any political influence in this respect, as is proved by their attitude in Parliament and by letter of Prince Mohammed Ali testifying to such abstention. Moreover, the court established beyond dispute, that Nahas Pasha had immediately abandoned the lawsuit and notified his



client to this effect as soon as he became Premier. The court declared it had no cause to doubt the client's declarations that he had chosen Nahas Pasha and his colleagues as lawyers in the case because they were men of wide learning and unimpeachable character and moral courage. The court further criticised the conduct of the Prosecutor-General who failed to present one single fact justifying grave allegations, contenting himself with imaginary charges. The court also denounced the adversaries of Nahas Pasha for having resorted to theft and forgery of the original documents with a view to stigmatizing his honor and integrity both as lawyer and statesman. It declared that some hidden hand had by bribery managed to induce a certain clerk, called Ibrahim Hosny, to give false evidence, but he was happily caught in *flagrante delicto* of forging documents attributed to Nahas Pasha. The court further condemned three newspapers (which are present government organs) for publishing deliberately distorted translation of Fakhry Bey's Turkish letter to Fridon Pasha, stepfather of Prince Seifeldine. The court found that certain passages were mistranslated, while others inserted completely changed purport of the original document.—Fin."

This outrageous case, with others equally reprehensible, which I have cited, demonstrates clearly, unmistakably, I think, that what Egypt needs is a relief from foreign interference and political domination such as she has had to endure since 1882.

That success may soon crown her efforts for a real independence such as has, but recently, come to Turkey and China, is the fervent wish of the author.

# INDEX

- Abbas I., Successor of Mohammed Ali, 104
- Abbas Hilmi II., Successor of Tewfik Pasha, 141-142
- Alexander the Great, Funeral procession of, description of, his burial in Egypt, 74-76
- American Minister's Reception accorded by the Egyptian Government on the eve of his departure from Egypt, 248
- Minister's Speech, 248-253
- his attitude on the "liquor question," 253-254
- Appendices, 329
- Aswan Dam and its effects upon soil production, as viewed by His Excellency Samy Pasha, 26-30
- Britain's Conception of her rights in the Sudan, 237-243
- Britain's position taken in Sudan compared to that taken by her in China when the Opium Question precipitated crisis, 243-244
- Opium Conference at Geneva, 244
- secret treaties, 246
- British Employes, 259
- Personal Indemity, provision for, 260-262
- British Occupation of Egypt in 1882, 128
- British, Ultimatum of the, following death of Sir Lee Stack, with official correspondence relating thereto, 219-228
- Capitulations—Extra-Territorial Rights, 265-279
- Chamber of Deputies, Meeting of, 366
- Chronology of the various kings, 57-60
- Chronology of kings, continued, 70-73
- Climate, 301-310
- Constitution, Difficulties encountered in drafting it, 201
- second banishment of Zaghloul Pasha, 201-203
- his return, 204-205
- Crisis, Causes of the, 340-341
- Declaration of February 28, 1922, proclaiming Egypt an independent state, 185-186
- Lord Allenby's efforts in Egypt's behalf, 187
- Dr. Howell's appointments, 5-6
- official call on Egypt's ruler, 7-8
- impressions then made on the Sultan, 9
- impressions of Tut-Ankh-Amen's tomb shown in letter, 61-69
- Dr. Reisner's discovery of tomb of Mother of Cheops, 45
- the funeral furniture and other findings, 46-47
- Draft Treaty, 341
- its rejection, 341
- Ecclesiastical courts, 293
- striking example of their work, 293-296

- Editorial comment on Dr. Howell's Speech and that of His Majesty's, 17-19
- Education—schools, colleges, universities, 311-322
- Egypt a vassal of Macedonia—passing of Cleopatra and Mark Antony—Birth of Jesus, 89-91
- Egypt after the War, 180
- the fight for independence, 181
- deportation of Zaghoul Pasha, 182
- influence of His Majesty, the King, in securing release of Zaghoul Pasha and his colleagues, 182
- the Milner Mission, 183-184
- Egypt's dependency, 9-10
- change of status from dependency to independency, 11
- recognition of changed status by the Powers, 12-14
- Egypt, Future of, 323-329
- Egypt, Geography of, and her productions, 23-26
- Egypt's letter to Secretary Kellogg on Peace Pact Treaty, 349-357
- Egypt, Prehistoric and historic, 38-44
- Egyptian Parliament, Resolutions of, 346
- First parliament, Election of Members of, 206
- Zaghoul Pasha as Prime Minister, 206
- his Cabinet, 206-207
- spirit manifested by the members, 207-208
- letter of congratulations of the American Minister to the new Minister of Foreign Affairs, 209
- the Minister's reply, 210
- Fuad I., Accession to the throne as King, 14
- Fuad I., 153
- His Majesty's scholastic attainments, 154-155
- handicapped condition of His Majesty's people by reason of insanitation and illiteracy, 155-160
- the King's accomplishments for the betterment of his people, 161-164
- four outstanding questions to be settled between the Egyptian and British Governments, 165
- aid given to the Allied Armies by His Majesty's people. Likewise of the Hejaz Government, 166-168
- Great political crisis following the death of Sir Lee Stack, 211-213
- protest to the British procedure over the crisis, 213-216
- reply of Lord Allenby, with comments, 216-218
- Greek culture in Egypt Alexandria, 76
- Evidence of high state of culture and civilization among the Greeks of Alexandria today, 77
- Great public meeting there—addresses by Hon. Georges Roussos, Michel Salvago, President of the Greek Community, and the American Minister, 77-88
- History of invasion of Egypt by British, 168-174
- Incident showing spirit of Lord Allenby in contrast to his successor, 191

- Interview with King Fuad, 187-189
- Introductory Remarks, 1
- Ismail Pasha, 133-134
  - his connection with—the Suez Canal project, 134
  - opposition by the British over its construction, 135
  - securement of the interests of the Khedive in the Canal by Disraeli, 135-136
- King's reply to American Minister's Speech, 16-17
- King Fuad, Appendices, 329-333
- King Fuad's appreciation of the efforts of Lord Allenby, 185
- Labyrinth in Fayoum, 48-50
- Lawrence, Colonel, in Arabia, 175
  - Editorial of Cleveland "Plain Dealer" with respect thereto, 176
  - Cuban people's situation after Spanish American War, compared with that of Egypt, 176
  - Lloyd and Cromer's attitude towards Egyptian people, 177-178
  - Comparison made of the action of the Government of the United States and that of Great Britain in the matter of the assassinations of Vice Consul Imbri and Sir Lee Stack, 179
- Lloyd's, George, attitude on Egyptian Army, 247-248
- Lloyd's, George, attitude towards Diplomatic Corps, 255
  - a protest and result, 255-258
  - his alleged demeanor towards the Courts, 258
- Luxor, Most opportune time to visit, 48
- Mixed Courts of Egypt, 281-293
  - Alleged British interference in the appointment of an American judge, 290
- Mohammed Ali, founder of present dynasty, 101
  - destruction of Mamelukes, 102-103
- Mohammed Saiad Pasha, Viceroy, 104-105
- Mohammed, Influence of, in 622 A.D.—spread of his teaching, 92-93
- Moses—an outstanding character in Egyptian history, 31-36
- Mount Sinai, its history, 51
  - visit of the Minister with incidents relating thereto, 52-56
- Mustapha El Nahas Pasha, Personal letters of, bearing upon recent crisis, 333-336
  - his political speech, 336-340
- Napoleon in Egypt, 95-97
- Observations of Egypt by Wilfred Scarven Blunt and Francis Adams, on England's occupation, 143
  - interview of Mr. Adams with Khedive Abbas, 144-152
- Palace of the Ptolemies, Site of the, 98
  - death of Cleopatra and Mark Antony, 99
- Platt Amendment, 125-127
- Presentation of Letter of Credence by the American Minister, 14
- Present dynasty and its founder, 37
- President Harding, Letters from, 21-22
- President of Wafd, Letter of, to Dr. Howell, 357
- Prince Seifeldine, 349

Public Meetings Bill, 343

Religious toleration in Egypt, 105

— Official correspondence between President Lincoln and the Viceroy over a matter of international importance, 105-119

Sarwat Pasha, Government of, 192

— Official correspondence between Foreign Office and Allenby, 193-197

— fall of Sarwat Ministry, 196-199

So-called political diplomats versus Career men, 2-5

Suez Canal, 138

— Reference thereto by Judge Pierre Crabitès, under caption "Trustees of the Phinx," 138-140

Tewfik Pasha succeeds Ismail, 136-137

— Arabi rebellion, 138

To cotton, and not the presence of foreigners in Egypt, is due her prosperity, 120

— figures which show the facts as to prosperity, 130-131

Toussoun, Prince Omar, 121

— the Prince's interview with a press representative on the Ultimatum of the British over the assassination of Sir Lee Stack and the present situation existing between England and Egypt, 122-125

Visitors, 297-300

Zaghloul Pasha, His Excellency, 229-235

— first banishment, 186

— second banishment, 202-203

1

2













